

NATIONAL ARCHIVES & PUBLIC RECORDS SERVICES
OF PAPUA NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORTS

DISTRICT: Southern H/lands

STATION: Lake Kutubu

VOLUME No: 5

ACCESSION No: 496.

1953 - 1954

ISBN: 9980 - 910 - 70 - X

Filmed by/for the National Archives of Papua New Guinea,
PORT MORESBY - 1993

Sole Custodian: National Archives of Papua New Guinea.

Papua New Guinea Patrol Reports

Digitized version made available by



Copyright: Government of Papua New Guinea. This digital version made under a license granted by the National Archives and Public Records Services of Papua New Guinea.

Use: This digital copy of the work is intended to support research, teaching, and private study.

Constraints: This work is protected by the U.S. Copyright Law (Title 17, U.S.C.) and the laws of Papua New Guinea. Use of this work beyond that allowed by "fair use" requires written permission of the National Archives of Papua New Guinea. Responsibility for obtaining permissions and any use and distribution of this work rests exclusively with the user and not the UC San Diego Library.

Note on digitized version: A microfiche copy of these reports is held at the University of California, San Diego (Mandeville Special Collections Library, MSS 0215). The digitized version presented here reflects the quality and contents of the microfiche. Problems which have been identified include misfiled reports, out-of-order pages, illegible text; these problems have been rectified whenever possible. The original reports are in the National Archives of Papua New Guinea (Accession no. 496).

21

PATROL REPORT OF: LAKE KUTUBU ACC. No: 496.

Volume No. 5..... 1953/54... Number of Reports: 6.....

REPORT No:	FOLIO	OFFICER CONDUCTING PATROL	AREA PATROLLED	MAPS/ PTS	PERIOD OF PATROL	FILE NO.
1-1953/54	1-24	C.E.T. TERRELL - P.O.	WELA, NEMBE, MENDI AND MAGARIMA AREAS	photo map	21/7/53--27/8/53	
3-1953/54	1-35	"	LOWER TARI, MANKIDA BASIN AND NORTHERN NAMO FORE PATROL POST AND SAMBERIGA VALLEY.	map	23/10/53 - 21/11/53	
4-1953/54	1-23	"	KUTUBU - ERAVE LINE OF COMMUNICATION		19/12/53 - 11/2/54	
5-1953/54	1-10	E.D. WREN a/DO	MUBI, KOKOMA RIVER, FORE, SUGU RIVER.	map	12/4/54 - 13/5/54	
10A-1953/54	1-12	W.J. BRAND - P.O.	MUBI, KOKOMA, SAMBERIGA AND FORE VALLEYS		1/10/53 - 31/12/53	
10-1953/54	1-9	W.J. BRAND - P.O.			1/1/54 - 31/3/54	

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS DISTRICT PATROL REPORTS

1953/54

LAKE KUTUBU

<u>Report No.</u>	<u>Officer Conducting Patrol</u>	<u>Area Patrolled</u>
LAKE KUTUBU		
1 - 53/54	C.E.T.Terrell	Wela, Nembe, Mendi and Magarima Areas
3 - 53/54	C.E.T.Terrell	Lower Tari, Mananda Basin and North- ern Namu
4 - 53/54	C.E.T.Terrell	Fore Patrol Post and Samberigi Valley
5 - 53/54	E.D.Wren	Kutubu - Erave Line of Communication
10A - 53/54	W.J.Brand	Mubi, Kokoma River, Fore, Sugu River
10B - 53/54 - "	"	ERAVE PATROL POST & KUTUBU P.P.

NOTE: Patrol No. 10B of 1953/54 is in the 1953/55 Volume



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS Report No. 1 of 53/54

Patrol Conducted by C.E.T. TERRELL Patrol Officer

Area Patrolled WELA, NEMBE, MENDI, and MAGARIMA areas.

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans NIL
R.P. & N.G.C. 8, Carriers 19,
Natives N.M.O. 1, Prisoners 10.

Duration—From 31/7/1953 to 27/8/1953

Number of Days 28

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? NO

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services 29/9/1952 and after.

Medical ... NIL/19

Map Reference SKETCH MAP ATTACHED

Objects of Patrol Consolidation of Administration Influence, Investigate further and check fighting in WAGE area, check airstrip sites.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded direct by A.D.O. Lake Kutubu,
with copy to D.C. S.H.D.

Forwarded, please.

17 19 1953

[Signature]
E.D. WREN, a/Assistant District Commissioner Officer

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation ... £ NIL

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund ... £ NIL

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund ... £ NIL

Personal File Notes 2/1/54

DS30-18-39.

24th Sept. 1953

The District Commissioner,
Southern Highlands,
LAKE KUTUBU.

Patrol Report No. I/53-54.

This Headquarters does not agree with the a/Assistant District Officer, Kutubu, that this patrol could be classed as routine in any way. In fact it is one of the best patrols conducted by a single European since the area was first explored.

Nor can we agree that the peoples of the WAGE and HENBE Valleys are ready for control- the process will be neither easy nor speedy, even after MUNGANA Post is established, and even if more Field Staff is made available to you, which is unlikely for a long time.

There are quite a few people living along the HAGARIMA and ANDABARI Rivers, who may be able to assist with supplies for MUNGANA Post.

All reports received from the Southern Highlands District have maintained a consistent standard of excellence, and this record will be forwarded to His Honour the Administrator as an example of a beautifully presented Report.

AAR
(A. A. Roberts),
Actg. Director. D. D. S. & N. A.

c.c. A. D. O. KUTUBU.

PIA.

la

MIGRA

F

With space to be left blank

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

RADIOGRAM

From: _____

Station: _____

Date of Broadcast: _____

22 KUTUBU

29TH

1941

SERVICES MORESBY

NOTE: YOUR DESPATCH NO. _____

SEE MAPS OF 25, 26, 27 GOING FORWARD

MAR 27 3 40 PM

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

30/18/54



File No. 30/1

Sub-District Office,
TAGE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

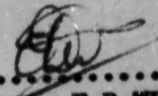
17th September, 1953.

The Director of District Services,
PORT MORESBY

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No.1 of 53/54

This patrol was of a routine nature, and was carried out after the A.P.C. survey to Mendi and Erave was cancelled. Mr. Terrell had been briefed previously, and no written instructions were issued.

The area to the NE of Kutubu is by no means under control, but is ready for the event. Immediately the post at MUNGANA is established, the process will be an easy and speedy one.

.....

E.F. WREN
s/Asst. District Officer.

Copy to D.C., S.H.D.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No.1 of 53/54

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.T.TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....Kutubu to Mendi, via WELA tribal area, and return via MUNGANA airstrip site, at junction of WAGE AND MAGARIMA Rivers.

PATROL PERSONNEL....Europeans:
C.E.T.Terrell, O.I.C.

Natives:


R.P. & N.G.C. - 8
N.M.O. - 1
Carriers - 19
Prisoners - 10

DURATION.....31st July, 1953 to 27th August, 1953: - 28 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(i) Consolidation of Administration Influence,
(ii) Investigate further and stop fighting in WAGE area.
(iii) Check airstrip sites.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch map attached.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report on Police personnel.
Appendix "B" - Map.


.....
C.E.T.Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

6th September, 1953.

INTRODUCTION

Prior to his departure on patrol in June, Mr. A.D.O. Wren instructed me to accompany the A.P.C. Survey which was then expected in this District, and while at Mendi to discuss several outstanding matters pertaining to the Sub-District with the District Commissioner Southern Highlands, Mr. G. Toogood. Following the cancellation of the A.P.C. survey, I decided to visit Mendi anyway, and at the same time conduct a patrol through the upper Wage area, in accordance with alternative instructions received from Mr. Wren.

The opportunity was taken of making follow up visits to the WELA tribal area, to clear up the matter of the BEM/HARANJE feuding, mentioned in Kutubu P/R No.9 of 52/53. This was successfully accomplished on the return journey, though on the outward trip the Bem faction had been as nervous as previously.

Consolidation work was done on the KUTUBU/MENDI, MENDI/MUNGANA, and MUNGANA/KUTUBU lines of communication, with emphasis on the improvement of tracks, and stabilisation of feed prices.

Checks were made on the relative merits of the two alternative station sites visited - the first at NIPA near the NEMBI Valley, and the second at MUNGANA. Though the first would be an ideal station site, the strip would require a lot of work to fit it for heavy aircraft, and it was with reluctance that advice was passed to the District Commissioner that I considered Mungana the more likely site. This is dealt with below.

All direct objectives of the patrol were duly carried out.

DIARY

Friday 31st July, 1953. TAGE - KOPAKA Ck. No.1

Timetable
Dep. TAGE 0730
Arr. NUBI Riv. 0900
Arr. KOPAKA Camp 1515

The patrol left TAGE after a slightly later start than intended, and moved off to the Mubi River, which was found to be swollen, following heavy rain in the last few days. Plans were made to construct a cane bridge. While the preliminaries were in progress, L/Cpl. AKURU reported that he had found a fording place some way below the bridge-site, and this was found to be feasible. After a certain amount of confusion, the patrol all crossed without any mishaps, and moved up the other side of the river for about an hour and a half, before striking across two ranges to camp at the Kopaka Ck. staging point, in intermittent rain.

Rations issued to all hands.
Walking time 5hrs 15mins.

Saturday 1st August, 1953. KOPAKA Ck. to AUGU No.2

Timetable
Dep. KOPAKA Camp 1100
Cross. HARABIA Ck. 1415-1445
Arr. AUGU 1640

A thoroughly miserable day. At 0620, it was reported to me that two of prisoners had escaped a few minutes earlier, and all patrol personnel were promptly despatched to try to catch them before they got far. However the few minutes start they had, proved sufficient, and they were immediately swallowed up in the heavy forest surrounding the camp. I called the chase off eventually, and gave Const. DOIWA a note to take back to TAGE to alert the station, and if possible to apprehend the escapees en route. The patrol then moved off to Augu, being held up by badly dragging carriers and

swollen creeks. An hour elapsed between the time I arrived at Augu and the last of the carriers turned up, and a vigorous pep talk was given. It was dark by the time camp had been fully erected, and I made it clear that the carriers had no one to blame but themselves for their discomfort. Steady rain had been falling most of the latter part of the afternoon, and the area round the rest-house erected by the Augu men was a veritable quagmire. However the rest-house itself was a welcome site. V/C GINU reported to me, and was requested to get four volunteers to return to Kopaka Ck. next day, and try to follow the prisoners. One of the patrol carriers was despatched to PAUA to inform the people in the lower Tari region of the break, and to round up the prisoners if they went through that area. This was a purely precautionary measure, since the two men in question had no idea of the country, and I anticipated they would return to Kutabu if they managed to get anywhere.

Rations issued to all personnel, as it was too late to buy food.
Walking time 4hrs 30mins.

Sunday 2nd August, 1953.

AUGU

No.3

The patrol remained in camp, so as to give Const. DOIWA a chance to catch up again. I had been informed that the bridge across the Augu had been washed away in a recent flood, and all available men were put on to completing the new one. Talks were held with most of the older men during the afternoon, and demoralizing influences that have recently been introduced were argued back and forth. The killing of Const. AGAU is now common knowledge in the area, and I was told that some people were arguing along the line that a Government man had been killed, and no revenge had been taken; that being the case the Government could not be such an effective body after all and there was no need to obey its strictures. The Administration's aims and motives were again declaimed, particular attention being paid to this attitude, and I was assured that the Augu gentry did not share this belief; they were merely relaying what they had heard from their acquaintances up and down the Wage.*

At 1650 Const. DOIWA reported in with very good news. On his arrival at Kutabu, he had informed Sgt. SAFE of the escapes. During that evening one of the prisoners walked into the station, and was rearrested. When questioned, he had no news of the other man, as they had separated. This morning Doiwa had left to return to Augu, and on crossing the Mubi, had come across the second prisoner, very sorry for himself, completely lost and wanting to go home. Doiwa duly brought him on up to camp. Considerable ill-will was displayed towards the prisoner who escaped by the others, who had had to endure close confinement as a result of the runaways. They had to be restrained forcefully from doing him violence.

Monday 3rd August, 1953.

HUGU - HARANJE

No.4

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. AUGU	0640
	Cross WAGE Riv.	1020-1120
	Arr. HARANJE	1420

Following the same track as was used on my last patrol to the area the party made good time to Haranje, though once again lagging carriers held us up somewhat. The Augu bridge was found to be well made and strong, but even so there was a delay crossing, because no matter how good a bridge looks, I refuse to allow more than one man at a time cross it. The Wage bridge was not so good, and had to be reinforced before it was useable

On arrival at Haranje we were told that a dance had just finished, in remembrance of the dead in the Bem fighting. As it had lasted about a fortnight, there was very little food in the place, and most of the locals had dispersed to stay with friends and relations. Apparently the dance finished earlier than planned, when a child got sick and died.

*...No further reference was made to this attitude in the course of the the patrol, but propaganda was spread to counteract it in any case.

Food sufficient for two meals purchased after much quibbling.
Walking time 5hrs. 20mins.

Tuesday 4th August, 1953. HARANJE - SOMTA No.5

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. HARANJE	0700
	At. BEM	0810-0930
	At. HAVOROTA	1155-1215
	Arr. SOMTA	1400

On arrival at TOMBU, 25 minutes out of Haranje, a halt was called, while I took a small detachment of police with me down to Bem, in an effort to contact the people who have been the root cause of the feuding in this area. However it was found on arrival that the people had left the day before, presumably as soon as they heard of the patrol's coming. There seemed every reason to believe that this kind of thing would keep up indefinitely, and so I decided to leave a small present in the village, as an earnest of our good intentions, and our desire to end hostilities. This was duly done, and the patrol returned to Tombu to pick up the remainder of the patrol.

Moving in direction slightly North of East, we moved through an area of heavy population, passing through villages and their Ceremonial Grounds with as little as ten minutes in between. Camp was made at Somta, and during the course of the afternoon well over a hundred people came into camp, and on the whole they were a well mannered lot, inquisitive and quite without fear. I interpret what has been regarded as arrogance by previous patrols as a natural independence of thought and action, and the attitude prevailing is "if what I do doesn't suit you, well that's your concern." Talks were held during the afternoon, and the reason for the patrol's presence was explained. The people showed themselves quite familiar with our aims, and were in full agreement on the stopping of fighting.

About twice as much food as we required was brought into camp in the evening, and I had the advantage of a buyer's market. A pig was refused when its owner demurred from lowering his price from an axe and a pearl shell.

Walking time 4hrs. 40mins.

Wednesday, 5th August 1953. SOMTA - KWATE No.6

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. SOMTA	0640
	At SANDARIP	0730-0750
	At HUNUA	0820-0830
	Arr. KWATE	0900

A short walk, through several more hamlets at close intervals. Kwate, the second village involved in the Bem fighting, was found to be deserted, these peoples attitude being the same as the Bem's. However soon after the camp was up people from all the adjacent villages poured in, and once again yesterday's boisterous attitude was reflected. I had hoped that these villagers would be induced to make an appearance when they saw the friendly relations reigning. However they did not, and in the evening when I was delivering the usual talk, I told the people I would be coming back this way, and asked them to tell the locals to refrain from running away.

Food more than sufficient for our needs was quickly bought, but the inevitable wearing haggling is becoming more and more a feature of our "markets". Two pigs refused today, for the same reason as yesterday.
Walking time 1hr. 50mins.

Thursday 6th August, 1953. KWATE - EGENDA No.7

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. KWATE	0635
	At ARFP	0715-0725
	Arr. EGENDA	0835

The patrol again moved generally east, passing out of the WELA (or OLA) tribal group, and into the Territory of the ARON tribe, the boundary being the NEMPI River, which we crossed at 0735, and which is a smallish stream, about 10 yards wide. Shortly after leaving Kwate, we saw a flat area of ground, drained by the Nipa Ck., which looked as if it might suffice as an airstrip. I had insufficient time to give it a careful inspection, but will do so on the return journey. At AREP a halt was called to treat a child which apparently had pneumonia, and then moved on to ERENDA, where camp was made, when I had been told that this was the last village we would pass through, before reaching the LAI Valley. The villages passed through today were not as numerous as further west, and this appears to be the edge of the heavy population. Long talks were held with the people who appeared in force, and all seemed very keen on the establishment of a post in the area, and the stamping out of the internecine fighting so prevalent in this country. As a whole the people were more friendly.

Virtually no food was brought forward when we asked for it, the explanation being that the SUMBI and MAVIP people were now living in the area, after their villages and gardens had been destroyed in fighting last July, and food was very short. I accepted the contention with reservations.

Walking time 1hr, 50mins.

Friday 7th August, 1953.

EGENDA - MAG No.8

<u>Timetable</u>		
Dep. EGENDA		0645
At MAVIP		0920-0935
Arr. SUMBI		1000
At HARPEA		1135-1210
At KURE LAI Riv.		1230-1240
Arr. MAG		1250

Shortly after leaving Egenda, we moved out of the open grass country, and struck rough ridges covered with moss-forest. At SUMBI we left this belt, coming out into a series of irregular valleys, with alternating grass and scrub. This is the area referred to by Mr. J.S. McLeod, D/C, when he crossed this country on his return from Kutuba last July. Signs of the fighting he referred to are still much in evidence, though the area is again being resettled, and several fires and new clearings were seen. An hour and a half of this country brought us out at the Lai River, after passing through Harpea, a village on the valley wall, above a good bridge which we subsequently crossed. Heavy population extends up and down the valley as far as the eye can see, and with the quietly flowing Lai in its casuarina bordered bed, the countryside is almost Arcadian.

Camp was made at MAG, the usual camp site for this route, and sufficient food was forthcoming when called for. This was contrary to expectations, so presumably Mr. McLeod's words on lack of co-operation and passive hostility last year did not fall on stoney ground.

Walking time 5hrs. 5mins.

Saturday 8th August, 1953.

MAG - PINJ No.9

<u>Timetable</u>		
Dep. MAG		0645
At HOMBRE		0855-0915
At TUGUP		1105-1140
Arr. PINJ		1220

An annoying days walk, down the Lai Valley on the Eastern side, over a series of deep gulleys, gouged out of the valley sides, which entailed a series of steep climbs and descents, with short flat areas in between. Both sides involved in the fight with Messers. Ford and Snow's patrol in May of this year were contacted, and appeared to be doing all that was required of them. Instructions had been given by Mendi that the area that had been fought over was to be planted in gardens, and the two opposing factions were busily digging within a hundred yards of each other.

The patrol did not raise any particular interest, and I should say the area is definitely quiet.

Capp was made on the dancing ground at Pinj, in really delightful surroundings. This is probably the most attractive camp site I have ever seen in. The people were all very friendly and they stuck round the camp like flies till after dark, when they had to be chased home.

Food was reported to be very short, as a result of the heavy demands made by the Day patrol, and rations had to be issued. Some tomatoes, cabbage and beans were bought and found very welcome.

Walking time 4hrs 40mins.

Sunday 16th August, 1953.

PINJ - MURUMBU

No. 15

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. PINJ	0635
	At, Top Divide	0800-0810
	Arr. MENDI Riv.	0945
	Arr. MURUMBU	1000

After leaving Pinj we followed the side of the Lai Valley along below the three ranges for a short while, before climbing up the side of the watershed separating the Lai and Mendi Rivers. A brief halt at the top, then down the other side through pasture groves, following up parallel to the range before coming out into the Mendi Valley proper. After crossing the Mendi River by a creek bridge, we went on ahead of the patrol arriving at the station a short while later. Mr. Price informed us that the District Commissioner was away, but due back tomorrow, and after arranging with the officer in charge for rations and accommodation for my patrol personnel, the party was stood down.

Monday 16th to Sunday 16th August, 1953.

MURUMBU

No. 11 - 17

A week was spent at Murumbi discussing business with the District Commissioner, reorganizing patrol equipment, and planning a slightly altered itinerary to fit in with the projected installation of the patrol post at Mangama. I was advised that the Cadet Patrol Officer, who was scheduled for posting at Lake Kutubu would be going forward via Tari within the next six months, subject to other staff movements. Two teams of pit-sawyers who indicated their willingness to work at Kutubu when I accompanied the District Commissioner on a visit to the DIMIPA saw-camp on the 11th, later decided that they did not wish to go after all, and the extended stay at Murumbi to enable their accompanying the patrol back became redundant. Final arrangements were made for the patrol's departure on Saturday.

Monday 17th August, 1953.

MURUMBU - ENDEMP

No. 18

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. MURUMBU	0735
	Arr. POROMANDA	0800
	At, MAIV	0915-0930
	At, URUMARE	1105-1110
	At LAI Riv.	1400-1515
	Arr. ENDEMP	1535

Moving North up the western side of the Mendi River, the patrol passed through the Methodist Overseas Mission at HUNJA, and then on over very pleasant undulating grass country, interspersed with villages, before arriving at HURUM, the last village in the Mendi valley this patrol visited. A halt was called here for lunch, and fresh guides collected for the rest of the day's walk. On leaving Hurum at 1230 we entered the rain forest on the Lai/Mendi watershed and climbing gradually we reached the top of the range at 1400, where a halt was called. From a clearing near here, I was able to obtain a most glorious view up and down the Lai Valley. A steep descent followed down to the

*....Subsequent advice has been received that a Cadet is no longer available.

Lai, which was crossed before the patrol went on up a low divide, separating Lai River and GOLEWA Ck.

Camp was made here and sufficient food was quickly bought, and sweet reasonableness prevailed at the food buying - a pleasant change from earlier. These people have been visited on only one previous occasion, and were found to be very friendly and co-operative. There were large numbers of women and children in camp - the first time they have come in in force, and my talk was very well received. Discussions followed on the tracks to be crossed between here and Mungana.

Walking time 6hrs 15mins.

Tuesday 18th August, 1953.

ENDEMP - TUBIB

No.19

Timetable

Dep. ENDEMP	0655
Cross GOLEWA Ck.	0705-0725
Arr. KEMA	0810
Arr. TUBIB	1055

The trend of today's walk was west-north-west, and the patrol passed through heavy population until TOBA was reached at 0820. This village was found to be the last of the CHENJU Clan, which borders the Golewa Ck, and from here on to TUBIB, we passed through country that was fought over about a year ago and both clans are still nervous of each other, though the initial death payments have been made. Our ENDEMP guides left us shortly after we passed TOBA, but it was not long before we collected further guides on the track, belonging to the KANJU clan, who took us through to camp.

Walking time 6hrs 15mins.

Once again the people proved very friendly, and I was told of the one previous patrol that has been over this track, and which branched off to the south from near here, after camping at Tubib. I believe it must have been a pre-war patrol. Over 120 men and boys remained in camp until dusk, and all were eager to hear what I had to say.

Adequate food was available, though the women who came into camp did not sell food - they attended as sightseers.
Walking time 3hrs. 10mins.

Wednesday 19th August, 1953.

TUBIB - BONA

No.20

Timetable

Dep. TUBIB	0645
Arr. HARANDA	0745
Cross NEMBI Riv.	1000
Arr. BONA	1215

Passing through KEMBAR, another village of the KANJU clan, we followed and then crossed the KIVE Ck., before coming to HARANDA, a village of the TAMINDI clan. From here we climbed up the HINJI range, through heavy forest, and down the other side to cross the Nembi - a mere trickle. A short halt followed, before we moved off to Bona, where camp was made.

To the best of my knowledge this village has not been visited before, and considerable interest was displayed in me particularly, by a very old man who hobbled out to meet us. Very friendly relations established, and assurances were given the patrol that these people had no further desire to fight. Discussions on tracks brought to light the fact that there is a shorter track than the one we have followed, but it is reported to lead over very rugged country, with no population on the way. A glance at the map will show that this patrol moved well south of the direct line between TUBIB and Mungana, and I presume the other track represents the direct route.

Walking time 4hrs 30mins.

Thursday 20th August 1953

BONA - MUNGANA

No. 21

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. BONA	0640
	At. JAMANDA	0910-0940
	Arr. HONEIS	1020
	At. CHANATR	1110-1125
	Arr. ARMANDA	1255
	Cross WAGE Riv.	1315-1400
	Arr. MUNGANA	13450

Our direction of march moved well round to the North today, taking us up to the top of the CHAUGUNK range, and then on to JAMANDA, from where I got a fine view of the Wage Valley, and was able to plot my position accurately, with several compass fixes. A steep climb down brought us out on the valley floor, at the base of Mt. HIR, a large mountain right inside the Wage Valley. Moving up the valley on the eastern side of the river, we passed through heavy population belonging to the OLA tribe, and then into the area belonging to the PUKPUK tribe. We had struck the route followed by Mr. B. Heagney, P/O, who patrolled this area last September, and crossed the bridge which collapsed when his party was using it. Though not strong, this patrol crossed the new one without mishap. From here we moved over undulating grass country, eventually to make camp at the site previously used by Mr. Heagney.

Since the departure of the last patrol, fighting has occurred in this area, and the previous village of Mungana has now been razed in the course of the war. However numerous people came in from nearby villages, chiefly to see the patrol, and all reported that food was very scarce indeed, due to a bad season, and also the fighting.

Rations issued.
Walking time 6hrs 25mins.

Friday 21st August, 1953

MUNGANA

No. 22

The patrol remained camped at Mungana, and started clearing a belt of the secondary cane grass that has grown since Heagney's patrol was here, down the length of the projected strip. I made a survey of possible station sites, with particular attention to convenient water, and my impression was that the site as a whole is not outstanding, but definitely the best available.

Yesterday a carrier attempted to strike a policeman with his knife, when the latter was carrying out his duty in trying to keep the patrol together, and a Court Case was held. The offender was sentenced to one month I.H.L. and when the result was known, a deputation of carriers protested. A lengthy harangue followed, in which I made it quite clear that threats of defection would make no difference to anyone, and that I was quite prepared to deal with a mutiny if it arose. The carriers returned to their work chastened and apparently satisfied, though I posted extra guards in case of trouble. None occurred however.

In the afternoon talks were held with the local landowners and headmen, and all signified their willingness to assist in the installation of a station here, and to sell such land as was required. I inquired into the recent fighting, and the attitude of the people appears to be that they would be only too pleased to stop fighting, but of their own accord they can't; however with a government station in the area, honour would be satisfied on all sides if opposing factions were told to refrain from fighting or take the consequences.

Such food as was bought had to be augmented by carried rations. It appears that food really is short, and what gardens I did see in the course of the day were all immature.

Saturday 22nd August, 1953.

MUNGANA - KANJE

No.23

Timetable

Dep. MUNGANA	0635
Cross MAGARIMA Riv.	0720
At. WAGOROKA Ck.	0835-0850
At. RAHE	1010-1035
At. SONGORA	1125-1135
Arr. KANJE	1240

We branched away from the track used on the upward journey, shortly before descending to the MAGARIMA River, which was crossed without incident. After following this river at the top of one of the valley walls for a distance, we again joined it, walking beside it to the junction with the Wage. Here we left both rivers, and climbed up a shelf, passing through two villages before coming to the WAGOROKA Ck, where a halt was called. I was told that the Hides/O'Malley patrol passed through this way, following down the valley close beside the Wage river. We then climbed further up the valley wall until we were just below the tree line, and then walked steadily through heavy population and numerous villages before arriving at Kanje.

L/Cpl. AKURU developed a severe attack of pneumonia along the track, and time was taken to give him an injection of penicillin. With another policeman, he was told to follow on behind as best he could, and he recovered considerably in the evening.

KANJE is the village from which legend has it the whole of the OLA tribe originated, and some time was spent during the afternoon and evening collecting some of their folk-lore. Also visits were paid to other nearby villages, and I was proudly shown the local headman's collection of Mother of Pearl shell and other valuables. These were somewhat depleted, as he has just finished a heavy death payment, but his moral stocks are particularly high as a result.

Food had to be turned away in the evening and the prices as a whole were reasonable.

Walking time 5hrs 15mins.

Sunday 23rd August, 1953.

KANJE - SOMTA

No.24

Timetable

Dep. KANJE	0650
Cross WAGE Riv.	0720-0810
At. KAGTA	1000-1015
Arr. SOMTA	1105

Walking roughly south-east, we crossed the Wage River by two cane bridges where the river is divided by an island. Both bridges were poor, and a couple of the supporting ropes broke when the two man box was being carried over the first one. However it stood the strain alright and all got across safely. I was informed that a man had recently been killed at KINDA, following an argument with his brother over a pig, but as preliminary payments had been made I took no action. We moved on down the western side of the Wage, passing through alternating grass-lands and forest, eventually coming out at Sonta shortly after rejoining the track previously used.

Food sufficient for three meals was bought during the afternoon, amid the usual scenes of excitement. At one stage a brief altercation occurred between a carrier and a local over some food, and much yelling followed, though I was pleased to note that the older men were very strong in their denunciation of their more volatile juniors who had started the commotion. Two pigs were again brought in but as before I refused to pay the exorbitant price demanded. Further talks with the villagers followed, and reference was made to the proposed station. Everyone indicated their interest, and they all wanted it to be put in in this area.

Walking time 3hrs. 10mins.

Monday 24th August, 1953.

SOMTA

No.25

The patrol remained in camp today, while I took four constables with me to visit two reported airstrip sites, and also to attempt to contact the KWATE people. We left the track used on the outward journey at HUDUA, and stayed half an hour at WALHOMA, which was the first of the suggested station sites. After a ladder had been built against a casuarina, and I had had a good look at the area, I realised it was absolutely hopeless, so we moved off down to NIPA via KWATE. By this time we had a retinue of well over a hundred natives, so I sent some of them off to induce representatives of the Kwate faction to come to their village while I went down to NIPA. Once again I was impressed with the possibilities of Nipa as a station site, but was disappointed in the strip, which would involve considerable labour even for a light plane. What there is of it is excellent, but it is far too short. When we got back to Kwate we found that a few men had come in, so while the party had lunch, I gave them a long talk on what our plans and intentions were, and they agreed with me that it was far more satisfactory to remain in their villages when a patrol arrived, than to take to the bush for long periods. They said they were quite prepared to be quit of fighting, but were not sure that the Bem people thought likewise. They added that they had no intention of getting mixed up in any further wars.

On arrival back at camp the results of the days work were imparted to the assembled multitude, who were visibly and vociferously disappointed.

Very little food brought in, and rations were issued instead. Walking time 3hrs. 40mins.

Tuesday 25th August, 1953.

SOMTA - TOMBU

No.26

Timetable

Dep. SOMTA	0635
At. HADOROTA	0750-0800
At UNGUBI	0900-0910
At BEM	1000-1110
Arr. TOMBU	1145

The patrol returned by the track used on the outward trip, and on arrival at Tombu at 0930, a detachment of police were told off to accompany me down to Bem, while the remainder of the patrol personnel stayed here making camp. We went down to Bem in full view of that village, and saw several men in occupation. As we walked in however they all disappeared out of the back way, and we were left in possession. As they left they shouted over their shoulders that we were to take the pig they had left tied up and begone. By dint of much vigorous shouting, they were induced to stop before they got out of earshot, and the next hour was taken up with enticing them to come within talking range. We eventually succeeded, and once again I described what our wishes were. The people could not be induced to return to the village while we were there, but they said that if we took the pig that had been left tied up in exchange for the present I had left on the way out, that would put an end to hostilities between us and them, and the next time a patrol visited the area they would greet it as friends. After I had told them that I also wanted them to make the death payment involved in the recent fighting, and they had assured me that they would, the party was withdrawn, and as we left the villagers again took possession.

On return to Tombu, the Haranje people who had assembled there in my absence were told of the result of my negotiations, and to seal the tripartite pact, were given part of the (by them) butchered pig. The Haranje people were a bit dubious of the Bem assurances, but promised to follow them up.

What food was available was brought in for sale, but had to be augmented. A small pig for return to Kutubu was purchased. Walking time 3hrs. 40mins.

Wednesday 26th August, 1953.

TOMBU - AUGU

No. 27

Timetable

Dep. TOMBU	0640
Arr. HARANJE	0700
Cross Wage Riv.	0845-0940
Arr. AUGU	1235

The patrol followed the same track as used previously, and covered it in rather better time. A start has been made by the Inga Haranje people at clearing a proper track, and where it has been cut there is a vast improvement. V/C Ginu reported all well at Augu, and also the information that Mr. A.D.O. Wren had returned a few days previously from his patrol. Instructions were given on the construction of roads leading out of Augu on the main lines of communication, and also that a police barracks be built here.

Potatoes for half rations were purchased during the afternoon, as well as a little cabbage brought in by the women and children, who were all as irrepressible as usual. Walking time 4hrs. 20mins.

Thursday 27th August, 1953.

AUGU - TAGE

No. 28

Timetable

Dep. AUGU	XXXX0635
At HARABIA Ck.	0820-0835
At KOPAKA Camp	1045-1100
At MUBY Riv.	1410-1430
Arr. TAGE	1600

Walking steadily with few halts, the patrol made good time back to TAGE. The Mubi had descended a lot, and the usual ford was used, though the prisoners behaved like drowning mice in the waist deep water. On arrival at Tage I reported to Mr. A.D.O. Wren, and after stowing patrol equipment, all personnel were stood down.

With more intensive patrolling, particularly in the Wage and Mubi Valleys, it should not be long before the natives realize that the decision as to whether or not they will go to war no longer rests with themselves, and that the risks of incurring the official wrath are not balanced by the satisfaction of staying their neighbours. The Mungwa war will accelerate this development considerably.

END OF DIARY

*...These are:

- (i) A pig is usually slaughtered and distributed evenly between both sides as a sign that the fighting is at an end.
- (ii) Sometimes a dance is held, and large numbers of pigs are killed by both sides, in proportion to the number of dead they have lost.
- (iii) Lastly, and often many years after the fighting has ceased, the actual death payments are made, in which a certain number of Mother of Pearl shells are exchanged for each person killed. The actual number depends on the status of the dead man within the community.

ANTHROPOLOGICAL

Linguistically speaking, the natives contacted by this patrol mostly belong to the same group. Distinct changes were found between the Wage, Lai and Mubi people, but the main language covers the whole area of the upper Wage, and the vicinity of Mungwa. The language spoken by MUBI, though also here KAMBI is used as a second or

The tribes passed through are as follows:-

- (1) Wage Valley, Mubi Valley, and Mungwa

ned -
Tribe.

ly
her
other
is,
it
e
go.

SUMMARY

NATIVE AFFAIRS

One of the main objectives of this patrol was to contact the BEM people, who are the second principal in the HARANGE/BEM fighting, with a view to finalizing the dispute. It will be remembered that on my last visit to the area, I was unable to arrange a meeting between the two groups, with myself acting as mediator, due to the fear of retaliation demonstrated by the Bem faction. On this occasion, contact was made, and though it was not wholly satisfactory, I was given assurances that both sides would refrain from further warfare, and would initiate the first of the usual three payments made in matters of this kind.* Though contact was made, I think it will be necessary for at least one further visit to be made by an Administration patrol before full relations are established with the Bem people. It seems unlikely that they will give any further trouble, judging by the respect in which they now hold Government patrols, and the establishment of a post at Mungana should also act as a stabilizing influence.

The area as a whole is quiet, though several areas were passed through in which heavy fighting had been in progress not long before our visit. The attitude with regard to fighting throughout the whole area, can best be described as one of honour before prudence. Perhaps neither side is keen on continuing with the fight, but by the same token it would not be consonant with dignity to stop it. This is best summed up by what I was told by the people in the vicinity of Mungana. They said; "We do not want to fight, but until there is something to stop us, we will continue to do so, because if we don't, other people will think we are not men."

Another factor is the unwillingness displayed by most natives to trust the other faction, and while two parties are fully armed and mistrustful of each other, incidents are bound to occur which can very easily lead to full-scale warfare. My impression is that this attitude has also prevailed in the Lai Valley and areas adjacent to Mendi, and it is only recently that Administration intervention in these areas has been found by the natives themselves to be a sufficiently strong deterrent.

With more intensive patrolling, particularly in the Wage and Nambi Valleys, it should not be long before the natives realize that the decision as to whether or not they will go to war no longer rests with themselves, and that the risks of incurring the official wrath are not balanced by the satisfaction of slaying their neighbours. The Mungana post will accelerate this development considerably.

*...These are:-

- (i) A pig is usually slaughtered and distributed evenly between both sides as a sign that the fighting is at an end.
- (ii) Sometime later a dance is held, and large numbers of pigs are killed by both sides, in proportion to the number of dead they have lost.
- (iii) Lastly, and often many years after the fighting has ceased, the actual death payments are made, in which a certain number of Mother of Pearl shells are exchanged for each person killed. The actual number depends on the stature of the dead man within the community.

ANTHROPOLOGICAL

Linguistically speaking, the natives contacted by this patrol mostly belong to the same group. Dialectal changes were found between the Wage, Lai and Mendi people, but the main language covers the whole area. In the upper Wage, in the vicinity of Mungana, the language changes and is replaced by HURI, though even here KAMUSI is used as a second or trade language.

The tribes passed through are as follows:-

- (i) AUGU Valley, WAGE Valley, and WAGE/NEMBI watershed -
OLA (WELA) Tribe.

on
her
ether
is,
it
e

- | | | |
|--|---|--|
| (ii) NEMBI River to LAI River | - | ARON Tribe |
| (iii) LAI River to MENDI River | - | KABOK Tribe |
| (iv) Apper WAHE in vicinity of
ANDABARI and MAGARIMA Riv-
er junctions | - | Composite of OLA,
ARON, and PUKPUK
Tribes. |

As far as cultural changes are concerned, there is little difference to be found between the above named tribes. All these natives live in low houses, no more than five feet high at the ridge pole, made of split-



TYPICAL GRASSLANDER'S
HOUSE

slab walling, and thatched with bladey-grass. All chinks and interstices are packed with moss, and with a fire burning inside, it is like walking into a slow oven when one enters one of them. The construction is good, and provided they do not get burnt down, either accidentally (as often happens) or intentionally (nearly as often), I would give these houses a life of upwards of five years, and probably often ten. When a house is destroyed, it is usual to plant a small garden of delicacies (tobacco, and beans and other imported vegetables) in the fertile ashes of the old home.

The most noteworthy difference in the way of life of these people is their village life. The Ola tribe were the only natives struck who live in villages. These are groups of houses, often more than a dozen, built round a cleared dancing ground, and hidden from it in clearings in the cane grass. Often two houses are occupied by one family, the man and his male descendants living in one, while the womenfolk live in another nearby. This is by no means a rule, however, and the Huri living conditions were often found to be duplicated in this area.* However all other tribes contacted dispense with villages, and live in houses scattered apparently haphazardly over the countryside, though all owing allegiance to one dancing ground.

The style of dress and artifacts of these people have been described on numerous previous occasions, so I will confine myself to a few comments, and comparisons with the Huri natives. The hall mark of the Huri - his great decorated wig - is absent throughout most of this area, though it is present to a certain extent among the PUKPUK people. This tribe appears to be a decadent offshoot of the real HURI tribe, who have come in contact with the OLA people, adopting some of the latter's culture and retaining some of their own, with the result that they have turned into a sort of mongrel breed. While on the subject it is interesting to note that in the lower TARI area, where again there is an offshoot of the HURI tribe, this culture admixture has not occurred to nearly such a marked degree, and there are only minor digressions from the culture of the parent tribe in that area.



PINJ DANCING GROUND AND
PATROL CAMP

To return to the style of dress, more often than not the men of the KAMUSI language group wear large mops of hair, sometimes held together in rough hair nets, or strips of bark or cloth, and sometimes not held together at all. I believe more attention is paid to the hair on festive occasions, but for the most part it does not seem to pose the cause for concern that it does with the Huri, with his perpetual touching up and decorating. For the rest, ornaments and dress are similar both for men and for women, and the

*...See Lake Kutubu P/R No.5 of 52/53, section "ANTHROPOLOGICAL".

accompanying photographs give a fair idea.

Legends.

The following stories were recounted to me by old men of KANJE Village, in the OLA tribal area, and are included in this report for what intrinsic interest they may possess.

HOW THE WHITE MAN CAME

"In the earliest days, the countryside was as it is now, though white people and brown people lived here in contentment together. One day, and with no warning or reason, there was a great convulsion of the earth, and



MAN OF SOMTA VILLAGE

the mountains fell into the valleys, and the earth shook, and the forests burned, and all the people were killed. All this happened very quickly, like the wink of an eye. However one white man, and one brown man* survived the catastrophe, and together they wandered over the desolated land. One day they came to a flat place, and decided that they would make a garden there and plant potatoes. When they had made the garden, they decided they would separate, and would meet again at the garden when the sweet potatoes were ripe, and whoever got their first was to wait for the other, and then they would dig and eat them together. However the brown man came back before the white man and was hungry, so he dug the potatoes and ate them. When the white man arrived, he was very angry, and asked

"Why didn't you wait for me as you said you would?"

"The brown man was frightened, and wouldn't answer, so the white man said

"I will go away now to my own place, and you will never be able to find me. One day, however, when I am no longer angry with you, I will come back and see how you are getting on, and then we will live together as we used to."

"Now the white people have come back, and are again living with us."

*...No names were known.

RUNGIAP AND LOST IMMORTALITY

"After the great catastrophe, RUNGIAP who with his wife survived the desolation, took his woman up to the top of Mt. IAMAVI, where they made a house and lived there. While they were there, a son was born to them, whom they called HOMENJI" (This is interpreted as 'Mother Dead').

"Rungiap told his wife that this child was to be made immortal, and to do

this the woman was not to feed him on the breast, but instead Rungiap would feed him on water and the sap of a certain vine. Rungiap then went away to collect the things he needed for this, and while he was gone the woman's breasts grew very heavy, so she fed her child. When the man returned, he found out what had happened and was angry, since his plan that all the people who would be born in the days to come would be able to go up to the sky and back to earth whenever they wanted to had been thwarted. He sat down and thought out what to do, and then called out 'PIRAPENJA'" (This means 'Mother alive') "but there was no answer. Then he called out 'Homenji' to which the woman answered 'yes'. As this indicated that the woman did not want immortality for her son, Rungiap suddenly disapp-



WOMEN OF THE LAI VALLEY

eared and went up into the sky where he now is, and he will not come to earth again, because it is the place of the dead.

"Now the descendants of Homenji and the brown man in the first story are the OLA people."

TOPOGRAPHY and COMMUNICATIONS.

Roads and Bridges.

Roads and bridges throughout the area are as they have always been - rough -, with the exception of a short stretch of the track between Augu and Haranje, on which a start has been made towards improvement. Eventually it is hoped to have clearly defined routes through to Mendi and Mungana from Kutubu, with regular staging points. As far as the Mendi/Kutubu L. of C. is concerned, it appears that the route followed by Mr. McLeod's patrol in June 1952 is the most satisfactory and easiest. Regular camps on this route are (1) Kopaka Ck. 5hrs 15mins., (2) Augu, 4½hrs, (3) Haranje, 5hrs 20mins., (4) Kwate 6½hrs., (5) Mag, 6hrs 55mins. and (6) Murumbu, 6½ hrs., and the six days shown here could probably be considerably reduced if necessary, and if good roads were available. The road to Mungana branches off from the Mendi road at Haranje, going via Kanje to Mungana in four days. A rest house has been built at Augu, and in time more rest houses will be built.



PARTY AT HUDUA.

When permanent materials are available, a proper suspension bridge will be built across the Mubi river. In the meantime, since the river is fordable even when reasonably high, I do not think that the erection of a temporary bridge would be expedient.

Airfields.

As mentioned earlier, two sites were inspected by this patrol - NIRA and MUNGANA. The first, though ideally situated as far as a station site is concerned, with heavy population in the immediate vicinity, good water, timber, sand and gravel, and an excellent area for buildings, the strip itself is only about 600 yards of flat ground, with a rise and then a creek at one end, and scrub and a hilleck at the other. Mungana is a very good prospect for an airstrip, but the population round about is light, and the soil does not appear to be particularly productive, the chief vegetation being kunai. While the installation of a post there is under way, I think the bulk of food stuffs consumed will have to be imported.



VIEW UP THE WAGE VALLEY
FROM BELOW KWATE

Topography.

The only portion of the country that this patrol crossed and that has not been reported on previously is the area between Lai and Wage Valleys, going via the Golewa Ck. This is a series of irregular valleys, similar to the country further south on the same watershed, though with a high valley wall to be negotiated before dropping down to the Wage River.

Generally, the country consists of cane grass and kunai valleys, with the timber taking over about two thirds of the way up the valley walls.

The ranges separating these valleys are predominantly limestone. The Wage/Nembi watershed is probably the most fertile area struck; i.e. the area between Haranje and Egenda, and the Wage Valley as a whole seems considerably better country than the Mendi or Lai Valleys.

MEDICAL AND HEALTH.

There is very little to record under this heading. The most serious disease in the area is pneumonia, and three cases were treated by this patrol. One man who might or might not have had Hansen's Disease was seen, but it was impossible to verify this, and no attempt at treatment was made. I was later informed at Mendi that there is quite an amount of this sickness in the area.

Patrol personnel were as a whole healthy, though being un-acclimatized to the higher country crossed, numerous colds developed, resulting in a few cases of malaria and also some pneumonia.

As a whole the country is healthy and invigorating, and a thoroughly pleasant change from the rain forest round Lake Kutubu.

AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK.

The staple throughout the whole region is the sweet potato, augmented by native cabbages of several varieties, mimia, sugar cane, bread fruit, pandanus and so on. The sweet potato grown is for the most part the small red variety, though the Okinawa type is gradually penetrating. European vegetable seed is being circulated from Mendi, and quite extensive French bean gardens were seen in the Lai Valley. Some tomatoes and English cabbage too were seen, and it should not be long before these gain a firm hold in the native diet. Soya beans are being grown extensively at Mendi, and I understand these too are to be circulated among the villages.



VIEW DOWN THE LAI VALLEY FROM HARPEA

The soil is for the most part mediocre at best, and that in the Mendi Valley is downright poor. Potatoe gardens are not heavy yielding, though better varieties of plants will probably produce an improvement. As mentioned above the Wage area appeared the most fertile, and adequate food was brought to the patrol, even though this is reported to be the off-season. The position was not so good in the Lai Valley, and I believe food is hard to buy round Mendi. The large areas of Kunai grass seen probably give some indication of the lack of soil fertility in the area.



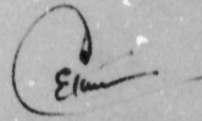
MENDI STATION FROM THE P/O'S RESIDENCE

Livestock consists exclusively of pigs and dogs. The former are very healthy, and forming as they do one of the chief economic units in the local currency, are well tended. Right through the area they are very common, though in comparison with other parts of this District, an excessively high price is

demandd for them. Dogs are fairly common, and are kept chiefly as pets. Some very nice looking pups were seen, and are obviously regarded with much affection by their owners.

MAP.

The attached sketch map is a modification of the four miles to the inch District Map, amended with such data as has been accumulated since the original map was drawn up in 1950. All new villages and rivers have been fixed either by time and compass traverse or by triangulation.



.....
C.E.T. Terrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

6th September, 1953.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No. 1-53/54

APPENDIX "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No. 1269 L/Cpl. AKURU 28 days

A thoroughly reliable member. Conduct and ability good. An excellent patrol policeman.

No. 8351 Const. MAUI 28 days

Conduct and ability fair. Against my will I was obliged to use this man as interpreter, and being a young man, this gave him an enlarged idea of his own importance. With more experience he will develop into a steady member.

No. 4046 Const. MANIGOLI 28 days

Conduct and ability average. This and the remaining six members who accompanied the patrol were originally seconded to Kutubu for escort duties with the cancelled A.P.C. survey. A quiet and reliable man, who quickly learned his duties.

No. 1856 Const. TAMUTAI 28 days

The senior constable accompanying the patrol, who carried out his duties efficiently and well. Will make a good N.C.O.

No. 8357 Const. JOHN 28 days

Conduct good, ability average. Steady, and does what he is told. Not brilliant.

No. 6333 Const. DOIWA 28 days


Probably the most outstanding member of the patrol police. A keen and efficient man, who cheerfully does more than his share.

No. 8118 Const. GARE 28 days

Conduct good, ability fair. Very young, and without previous patrol experience. Learns fast but scarcely suitable for promotion at this stage. I understand he is attending an N.C.O. course at Sogeri.

No. 8119 Const. MAGAO 28 days

Much the same as Gare. Good natured, and quietly does what he is told.

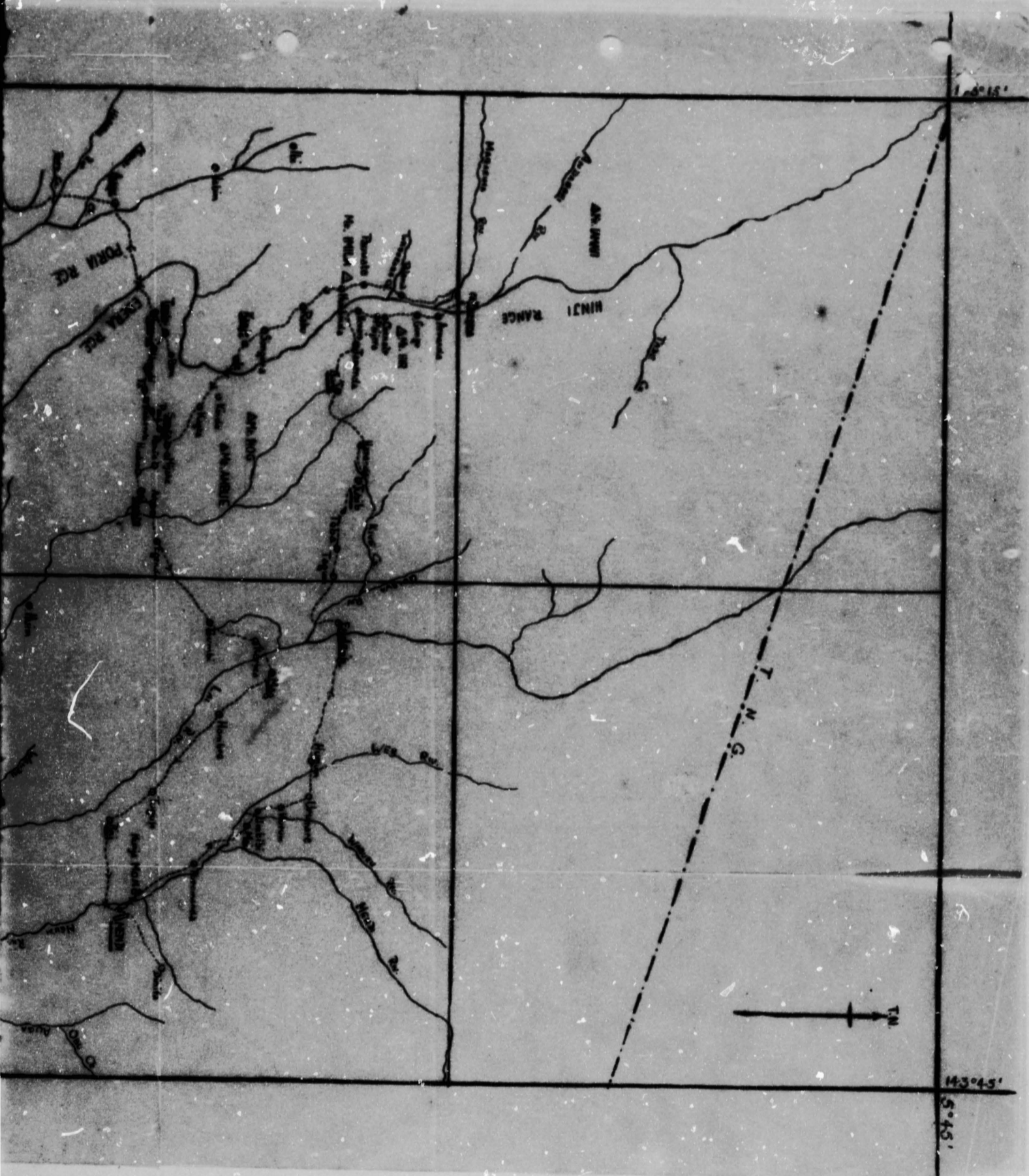
.....

C.E.T. Terrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

6th September, 1953.

STORES TAKEN ON PATROL

ITEM	Amount Taken on Patrol	HOW ISSUED					Amount Returned to Store
		Issues to Police	Issues to Carriers	Payment of Carriers	Purchase of Food	Hire of Canoes	
Salt	lbs 17	2	3		3		9
Shell, Cowrie	lbs 12				3		1
Beads	lbs 7				3		4
Knives, 15"	ea 18				4		14
" 14"	ea 6				3		3
" 12"	ea 12				9		3
" 8"	ea 6				1		5
" 6"	ea 12				12		Nil
" 4"	ea 24				21		3
Mirrors, 8x6"	ea 4						4
" 6x4"	ea 11				3		8
" 4x3"	ea 4				4		Nil
Tomahawks	ea 18			1	6		11
Shell, M.O.P.	ea 9			1	5		3
Paint, Face, Red	lbs 1/2				1/2		Nil
Necklets	ea 6						6
Fishlines	ea 6					2	4
Axes, 1/2	ea 1						1
Needles, Sew	ea 3					1	2
" Packing	ea 1						1
Kerosene	gls 2	1					1
Blades, Razor	ea 50	8	1	2			39
Matches	bxs 60	8	11	2			39
Tobacco	lbs 8	2	2				4
Rice	lbs 380	100	167				113
Wheatmeal	lbs 72	10	12				50
Meat	tin 16	6					10
Vegemite	lbs 12	5	21				41
Sugar	lbs 36	18	18				Nil
Batteries, 1.5v	ea 9	9					Nil
Mantles, Tilly	ea 9					9	Nil
Generators	ea 3					3	Nil



1.5°15'

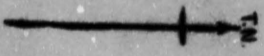
143°45'

5°45'

FORM RGE

HINJI RANGE

T.N.G.



SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS
LAKE KUTUBU

P/R No. 1 of 53/54

By: C.E.T.Terrell P.O.

To: WELA, NEMBI, MENDI and MAGARIMA areas

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA



File No. 30/1

Sub-District Office,
TAGHE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

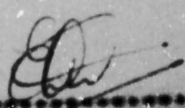
17th September, 1953.

The Director of District Services,
FORT MOSESBY.

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No.1 of 53/54

This patrol was of a routine nature, and was carried out after the A.P.C. survey to Mendi and Erave was cancelled. Mr. Torroll had been briefed previously, and no written instructions were issued.

The area to the NE of Kutubu is by no means under control, but is ready for the event. Immediately the post at MUNGANA is established, the process will be an easy and speedy one.


.....
E.D. WREN
s/Asst. District Officer.

Copy to D.C., S.H.D.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No.1 of 59/54

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.F. TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....Kutubu to Mendi, via WELA tribal area, and return via MUNGANA airstrip site, at junction of WAGE AND MAGARIMA Rivers.

PATROL PERSONNEL.....Europeans:
C.E.F. Terrell, O.I.C.

Natives:


R.P. & N.G.C. - 8
N.M.C. - 1
Carriers - 19
Prisoners - 10

DURATION.....Sist July, 1953 to 27th August, 1953: - 29 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(i) Consolidation of Administration Influence,
(ii) Investigate further and stop fighting in WAGE area.
(iii) Check airstrip sites.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch map attached.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report on Police personnel.
Appendix "B" - Map.


.....
C.E.F. Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

24th September, 1953.

INTRODUCTION

Prior to his departure on patrol in June, Mr. A.D.O. Wren instructed me to accompany the A.P.C. Survey which was then expected in this District, and while at Mendi to discuss several outstanding matters pertaining to the Sub-District with the District Commissioner Southern Highlands, Mr. G. Tegeed. Following the cancellation of the A.P.C. survey, I decided to visit Mendi anyway, and at the same time conduct a patrol through the upper Wage area, in accordance with alternative instructions received from Mr. Wren.

The opportunity was taken of making follow up visits to the WELA tribal area, to clear up the matter of the BEN/HARANJE feuding, mentioned in Kutabu P/R No. 9 of 52/53. This was successfully accomplished on the return journey, though on the outward trip the Ben faction had been as nervous as previously.

Consolidation work was done on the KUTUBU/MENDEI, MENDEI/MUNGANA, and MUNGANA/KUTUBU lines of communication, with emphasis on the improvement of tracks, and stabilisation of food prices.

Checks were made on the relative merits of the two alternative station sites visited - the first at NIPA near the MENDEI Valley, and the second at MUNGANA. Though the first would be an ideal station site, the strip would require a lot of work to fit it for heavy aircraft, and it was with reluctance that advice was passed to the District Commissioner that I considered Mungana the more likely site. This is dealt with below.

All direct objectives of the patrol were duly carried out.

DIARY

Friday 31st July, 1953.

TAGE - KOPAKA Ck.

No. 1

Timetable

Dep. TAGE	0730
ARR. MUBI Riv.	0900
ARR. KOPAKA Camp	1315

The patrol left TAGE after a slightly later start than intended, and moved off to the Mubi River, which was found to be swollen, following heavy rain in the last few days. Plans were made to construct a cane bridge. While the preliminaries were in progress, 1/Cpl. AKUBU reported that he had found a fording place some way below the bridge-site, and this was found to be feasible. After a certain amount of confusion, the patrol all crossed without any mishaps, and moved up the other side of the river for about an hour and a half, before striking across two ranges to camp at the Kopaka Ck. staging point, in intermittent rain.

Rations issued to all hands.
Walking time 5hrs 15mins.

Saturday 1st August, 1953.

KOPAKA Ck. to ANGU

No. 2

Timetable

Dep. KOPAKA Camp	1100
Cross. HARADIA Ck.	1415-1445
ARR. ANGU	1640

A thoroughly miserable day. At 0630, it was reported to me that two of ^Kprisoners had escaped a few minutes earlier, and all patrol personnel were promptly despatched to try to catch them before ^{it} got far. However the few minutes start they had, proved sufficient, and they were immediately swallowed up in the heavy forest surrounding the camp. I called the chase off eventually, and gave Const. DOIWA a note to take back to Tage to alert the station, and if possible to apprehend the escapees en route. The patrol then moved off to Angu, being held up by badly dragging carriers and

swollen creeks. An hour elapsed between the time I arrived at Augu and the last of the carriers turned up, and a vigorous pep talk was given. It was dark by the time camp had been fully erected, and I made it clear that the carriers had no one to blame but themselves for their discomfort. Steady rain had been falling most of the latter part of the afternoon, and the area round the rest-house erected by the Augu men was a veritable quagmire. However the rest-house itself was a welcome site. V/C GINU reported to me, and was requested to get four volunteers to return to Kopaka Ck. next day, and try to follow the prisoners. One of the patrol carriers was despatched to PAUA to inform the people in the lower Tari region of the break, and to round up the prisoners if they went through that area. This was a purely precautionary measure, since the two men in question had no idea of the country, and I anticipated they would return to Kutubu if they managed to get anywhere.

Rations issued to all personnel, as it was too late to buy food.
Walking time 4hrs 30mins.

Sunday 2nd August, 1953.

AUGU

No.3

The patrol remained in camp, so as to give Const. DOIWA a chance to catch up again. I had been informed that the bridge across the Augu had been washed away in a recent flood, and all available men were put on to completing the new one. Talks were held with most of the elder men during the afternoon, and generalizing influences that have recently been introduced were argued back and forth. The killing of Const. AGAU is now common knowledge in the area, and I was told that some people were arguing along the line that a Government man had been killed, and no revenge had been taken; that being the case the Government could not be such an effective body after all and there was no need to obey its strictures. The Administration's aims and motives were again declaimed, particular attention being paid to this attitude, and I was assured that the Augu gentry did not share this belief; they were merely relaying what they had heard from their acquaintances up and down the Waga.

At 1650 Const. DOIWA reported in with very good news. On his arrival at Kutubu, he had informed Sgt. SAFE of the escapes. During that evening one of the prisoners walked into the station, and was rearrested. When questioned, he had no news of the other man, as they had separated. This morning Doiwa had left to return to Augu, and on crossing the Muli, had come across the second prisoner, very sorry for himself, completely lost and wanting to go home. Doiwa duly brought him on up to camp. Considerable ill-will was displayed towards the prisoner who escaped by the others, who had had to endure close confinement as a result of the runaways. They had to be restrained forcefully from doing him violence.

Monday 3rd August, 1953.

HUGU - HARANJE

No.4

<u>Timetable</u>	Dop. AUGU	0640
	Cross WAGE Riv.	1020-1120
	Arr. HARANJE	1420

Following the same track as was used on my last patrol to the area the party made good time to Haranje, though once again lagging carriers held us up somewhat. The Augu bridge was found to be well made and strong, but even so there was a delay crossing, because no matter how good a bridge looks, I refuse to allow more than one man at a time cross it. The Waga bridge was not so good, and had to be reinforced before it was useable

On arrival at Haranje we were told that a dance had just finished, in remembrance of the dead in the Dem fighting. As it had lasted about a fortnight, there was very little food in the place, and most of the locals had dispersed to stay with friends and relations. Apparently the dance finished earlier than planned, when a child got sick and died.

*...No further reference was made to this attitude in the course of the the patrol, but propaganda was spread to counteract it in any case.

Food sufficient for two meals purchased after much quibbling.
Walking time 5hrs. 20mins.

Tuesday 4th August, 1953.

HARANJE - SOMTA

No.5

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. HARANJE	0700
	At. BEN	0810-0930
	At. HANODOTA	1155-1215
	Arr. SOMTA	1400

On arrival at TOMBU, 25 minutes out of Haranje, a halt was called, while I took a small detachment of police with me down to Ben, in an effort to contact the people who have been the root cause of the feuding in this area. However it was found on arrival that the people had left the day before, presumably as soon as they heard of the patrol's coming. There seemed every reason to believe that this kind of thing would keep up indefinitely, and so I decided to leave a small present in the village, as an earnest of our good intentions, and our desire to end hostilities. This was duly done, and the patrol returned to Tombu to pick up the remainder of the patrol.

Moving in direction slightly North of East, we moved through an area of heavy population, passing through villages and their Ceremonial Grounds with as little as ten minutes in between. Camp was made at Somta, and during the course of the afternoon well over a hundred people came into camp, and on the whole they were a well mannered lot, inquisitive and quite without fear. I interpret what has been regarded as arrogance by previous patrols as a natural independence of thought and action, and the attitude prevailing is "if what I do doesn't suit you, well that's your concern." Talks were held during the afternoon, and the reason for the patrol's presence was explained. The people showed themselves quite familiar with our aims, and were in full agreement on the stopping of fighting.

About twice as much food as we required was brought into camp in the evening, and I had the advantage of a buyer's market. A pig was refused when its owner scurried from lowering his price from an axe and a pearl shell.

Walking time 4hrs. 40mins.

Wednesday, 5th August 1953.

SOMTA - KWATE

No.6

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. SOMTA	0640
	At SANDARIP	0730-0750
	At HUNDUA	0820-0830
	Arr. KWATE	0900

A short day's walk, through several more hamlets at close intervals. Kwate, which is the second village involved in the Ben fighting, was found to be deserted, these peoples attitude being the same as the Ben's. However soon after the camp was up people from all the adjacent villages poured in, and once again yesterday's hysterical attitude was reflected. I had hoped that these villagers would be induced to make an appearance when they saw the friendly relations reigning. However they did not, and in the evening when I was delivering the usual talk, I told the people I would be coming back this way, and asked them to tell the locals to refrain from running away.

Food more than sufficient for our needs was quickly bought, but the inevitable wearing haggling is becoming more and more a feature of our "markets". Two pigs refused today, for the same reason as yesterday.
Walking time 1hr. 50mins.

Thursday 6th August, 1953.

KWATE - EGENDA

No.7

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. KWATE	0635
	At ADEP	0715-0725
	Arr. EGENDA	0835

The patrol again moved generally east, passing out of the WELA (or OLA) tribal group, and into the Territory of the ARON tribe, the boundary being the NEMBI River, which we crossed at 0735, and which is a smallish stream, about 10 yards wide. Shortly after leaving Kwato, we saw a flat area of ground, drained by the Nipa Ck., which looked as if it might suffice as an airstrip. I had insufficient time to give it a careful inspection, but will do so on the return journey. At AREP a halt was called to treat a child which apparently had pneumonia, and then moved off to ESENDA, where camp was made, when I had been told that this was the last village we would pass through, before reaching the LAI Valley. The villages passed through today were not as numerous as further west, and this appears to be the edge of the heavy population. Long talks were held with the people who appeared in force, and all seemed very keen on the establishment of a post in the area, and the stamping out of the internecine fighting so prevalent in this country. As a whole the people were more friendly.

Virtually no food was brought forward when we asked for it, the explanation being that the SOMB and MAVIP people were now living in the area, after their villages and gardens had been destroyed in fighting last July, and food was very short. I accepted the contention with reservations.

Walking time 1hr, 50mins.

Friday 7th August, 1953. EGENDA - MAG No.8

Timetable	Dep. EGENDA	0645
	At MAVIP	0920-0935
	Arr. SUMBI	1000
	At HARPEA	1135-1210
	At KERE LAI Riv.	1230-1240
	Arr. MAG	1250

Shortly after leaving Egenda, we moved out of the open grass country, and struck rough ridges covered with moss-forest. At SUMBI we left this belt, coming out into a series of irregular valleys, with alternating grass and scrub. This is the area referred to by Mr. J.S. McLeod, D/C, when he crossed this country on his return from Kutabu last July. Signs of the fighting he referred to are still much in evidence, though the area is again being resettled, and several fires and new clearings were seen. An hour and a half of this country brought us out at the Lai River, after passing through Harpea, a village on the valley wall, above a good bridge which we subsequently crossed. Heavy population extends up and down the valley as far as the eye can see, and with the quietly flowing Lai in its casuarina bordered bed, the countryside is almost Arcadian.

Camp was made at MAG, the usual camp site for this route, and sufficient food was forthcoming when called for. This was contrary to expectations, so presumably Mr. McLeod's words on lack of co-operation and passive hostility last year did not fall on stony ground.

Walking time 5hrs. 5mins.

Saturday 8th August, 1953. MAG - PINJ No.9

Timetable	Dep. MAG	0645
	At HOMBEN	0835-0915
	At TUGUY	1105-1140
	Arr. PINJ	1220

An annoying days walk, down the Lai Valley on the Eastern side, over a series of deep gulleys, gouged out of the valley sides, which entailed a series of steep climbs and descents, with short flat areas in between. Both sides involved in the fight with Messers. Ford and Frew's patrol in May of this year were contacted, and appeared to be doing all that was required of them. Instructions had been given by Vendi that the area that had been fought over was to be planted in gardens, and the two opposing factions were busily digging within a hundred yards of each other.

The patrol did not raise any particular interest, and I should say the area is definitely quiet.

Camp was made on the dancing ground at Pinj, in really delightful surroundings. This is probably the most attractive camp site I have ever been in. The people were all very friendly and they stayed round the camp like flies till after dark, when they had to be chased home.

Food was reported to be very short, as a result of the heavy demands made by the May patrol, and rations had to be issued. Some tomatoes, cabbage and beans were bought and found very welcome.

Walking time 4hrs 40mins.

Sunday 9th August, 1953.

PINJ - MURUMBU

No.10

<u>Timetable</u>		
Dep. PINJ		0635
At, to Divide		0800-0810
Arr. MENDI Riv.		0945
Arr. MURUMBU		1000

After leaving Pinj we followed the side of the Lai Valley along below the tree line for a short while, before climbing up the side of the watershed separating the Lai and Mendi Rivers. A brief halt at the top, then down the other side through pandanus groves, following up parallel to the range before coming out into the Mendi Valley proper. After crossing the Mendi River by a crude bridge, I went on ahead of the patrol arriving at the station a short while later. Mr. Frow informed me that the District Commissioner was away, but due back tomorrow, and after arranging with the officer in charge for rations and accommodation for my patrol personnel, the party was stood down.

Monday 10th to Sunday 16th August, 1953.

MURUMBU

Nos.11 - 17

A week was spent at Murumbu discussing business with the District Commissioner, reorganising patrol equipment, and planning a slightly altered itinerary to fit in with the projected installation of the patrol post at Mungana. I was advised that the Cadet Patrol Officer, who was scheduled for posting at Lake Kutubu would be going forward via Tari within the next six weeks, subject to other staff movements. Two teams of pit-sawyers who indicated their willingness to work at Kutubu when I accompanied the District Commissioner on a visit to the DIMIPA saw-camp on the 11th, later decided that they did not wish to go after all, and the extended stay at Murumbu to enable their accompanying the patrol back became redundant. Final arrangements were made for the patrol's departure on Saturday.

Monday 17th August, 1953.

MURUMBU - ENDEMP

No.18

<u>Timetable</u>		
Dep. MURUMBU		0725
Arr. POROMANDA		0805
At, MAIV		0915-0930
At. UYUMANE		1105-1110
At LAI Riv.		1500-1515
Arr. ENDEMP		1635

Moving North up the western side of the Mendi River, the patrol passed through the Methodist Overseas Mission at HUNJA, and then on over very pleasant undulating grass country, interspaced with villages, before arriving at HUNUM, the last village in the Mendi valley this patrol visited. A halt was called here for lunch, and fresh guides collected for the rest of the day's walk. On leaving Hunum at 1220 we entered the rain forest on the Lai/Mendi watershed and climbing gradually we reached the top of the range at 1400, where a halt was called. From a clearing near here, I was able to obtain a most glorious view up and down the Lai Valley. A steep descent followed down to the

*...Subsequent advice has been received that a Cadet is no longer available.

Lai, which was crossed before the patrol went on up a low divide, separating Lai River and GOLEWA Ck.

Camp was made here and sufficient food was quickly bought, and sweet reasonableness prevailed at the food buying - a pleasant change from earlier. These people have been visited on only one previous occasion, and were found to be very friendly and co-operative. There were large numbers of women and children in camp - the first time they have come in in force, and my talk was very well received. Discussions followed on the tracks to be crossed between here and Mungana.

Walking time 6hrs 15mins.

Tuesday 18th August, 1953.

ENDEMP - TUBIB

No. 18

Timetable

Dep. ENDEMP	0655
Cross GOLEWA Ck.	0705-0725
Arr. KEMA	0810
Arr. TUBIB	1055

The trend of today's walk was west-north-west, and the patrol passed through heavy population until TORA was reached at 0830. This village was found to be the last of the GURUJU clan, which borders the Golewa Ck, and from here on to TUBIB, we passed through country that was fought over about a year ago and both clans are still nervous of each other, though the initial death payments have been made. Our ENDEMP guides left us shortly after we passed TORA, but it was not long before we collected further guides on the track, belonging to the KANJU clan, who took us through to camp.

Now once again the people proved very friendly, and I was told of the one previous patrol that has been over this track, and which branched off to the south from near here, after camping at Tubib. I believe it must have been a pre-war patrol. Over 150 men and boys remained in camp until dusk, and all were eager to hear what I had to say.

Adequate food was available, though the women who came into camp did not sell food - they attended as sightseers.
Walking time 8hrs. 10mins.

Wednesday 19th August, 1953.

TUBIB - DONA

No. 20

Timetable

Dep. TUBIB	0645
Arr. HARANDA	0745
Cross NEMBI Riv.	1000
Arr. DONA	1215

Passing through KEMBAR, another village of the KANJU clan, we followed and then crossed the KIVE Ck., before coming to HARANDA, a village of the TANINBI clan. From here we climbed up the NINJI range, through heavy forest, and down the other side to cross the Nembi - a mere trickle. A short halt followed, before we moved off to Dona, where camp was made.

To the best of my knowledge this village has not been visited before, and considerable interest was displayed in me particularly, by a very old man who hobbled out to meet us. Very friendly relations established, and assurances were given the patrol that these people had no further desire to fight. Discussions on tracks brought to light the fact that there is a shorter track than the one we have followed, but it is reported to lead over very rugged country, with no population on the way. A glance at the map will show that this patrol moved well south of the direct line between TUBIB and Mungana, and I presume the other track represents the direct route.

Walking time 4hrs 30mins.

Thursday 20th August 1958

DONA - MUNGANA

No. 21

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. DONA	0940
	At. JAMANDA	0910-0940
	Arr. HONRIS	1020
	At. CHANATH	1110-1135
	Arr. ANWANDA	1235
	Cross WAGE RIV.	1315-1400
	Arr. MUNGANA	15450

Our direction of march moved well round to the North today, taking us up to the top of the CRAUGUNK range, and then on to JAMANDA, from where I got a fine view of the Wage Valley, and was able to plot my position accurately, with several compass fixes. A steep climb down brought us out on the valley floor, at the base of Mt. NIR, a large mountain right inside the Wage Valley. Moving up the valley on the eastern side of the river, we passed through heavy population belonging to the OLA tribe, and then into the area belonging to the PUEPUEK tribe. We had struck the route followed by Mr. B. Heagney, P/O, who patrolled this area last September, and crossed the bridge which collapsed when his party was using it. Though not strong, this patrol crossed the new one without mishap. From here we moved over undulating grass country, eventually to make camp at the site previously used by Mr. Heagney.

Since the departure of the last patrol, fighting has occurred in this area, and the previous village of Mungana has now been razed in the course of the war. However numerous people came in from nearby villages, chiefly to see the patrol, and all reported that food was very scarce indeed, due to a bad season, and also the fighting.

Nations issued.
Walking time 6hrs 25mins.

Friday 21st August, 1958

MUNGANA

No. 22

The patrol remained camped at Mungana, and started clearing a belt of the secondary cane grass that has grown since Heagney's patrol was here, down the length of the projected strip. I made a survey of possible station sites, with particular attention to convenient water, and my impression was that the site as a whole is not outstanding, but definitely the best available.

Yesterday a carrier attempted to strike a policeman with his knife, when the latter was carrying out his duty in trying to keep the patrol together, and a Court Case was held. The offender was sentenced to one month I.M.L. and when the result was known, a deputation of carriers protested. A lengthy harangue followed, in which I made it quite clear that threats of defection would make no difference to anyone, and that I was quite prepared to deal with a mutiny if it arose. The carriers returned to their work chastened and apparently satisfied, though I posted extra guards in case of trouble. None occurred however.

In the afternoon talks were held with the local landowners and headmen, and all signified their willingness to assist in the installation of a station here, and to sell such land as was required. I inquired into the recent fighting, and the attitude of the people appears to be that they would be only too pleased to stop fighting, but of their own accord they can't; however with a government station in the area, honour would be satisfied on all sides if opposing factions were told to refrain from fighting or take the consequences.

Such food as was bought had to be augmented by carried rations. It appears that food really is short, and what gardens I did see in the course of the day were all immature.

Saturday 22nd August, 1958.

MUNGANA - KANJE

No. 23

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. MUNGANA	0635
	Cross MAGARINA Riv.	0720
	At. WAGORORA Ck.	0835-0850
	At. WAGE	1010-1035
	At. SONGORA	1125-1135
	Arr. KANJE	1240

We branched away from the track used on the upward journey, shortly before descending to the MAGARINA River, which was crossed without incident. After following this river at the top of one of the valley walls for a distance, we again joined it, walking beside it to the junction with the Wage. Here we left both rivers, and climbed up a shelf, passing through two villages before coming to the WAGORORA Ck, where a halt was called. I was told that the Midea/S'Halley patrol passed through this way, following down the valley close beside the Wage river. We then climbed further up the valley wall until we were just below the tree line, and then walked steadily through heavy population and numerous villages before arriving at Kanje.

L/Cpl. AKURU developed a severe attack of pneumonia along the track, and time was taken to give him an injection of penicillin. With another policeman, he was told to follow on behind as best he could, and he recovered considerably in the evening.

KANJE is the village from which legend has it the whole of the OLA tribe originated, and some time was spent during the afternoon and evening collecting some of their folk-lore. Also visits were paid to other nearby villages, and I was proudly shown the local headman's collection of Mother of Pearl shell and other valuables. These were somewhat depleted, as he has just finished a heavy death payment, but his moral stocks are particularly high as a result.

Feed had to be turned away in the evening and the prices as a whole were reasonable.

Walking time 5hrs 15mins.

Sunday 23rd August, 1958.

KANJE - SOMTA

No. 24

<u>Timetable</u>	Dep. KANJE	0650
	Cross WAGE Riv.	0720-0810
	At KAGTA	1000-1015
	Arr. SOMTA	1105

Walking roughly south-east, we crossed the Wage River by two cane bridges where the river is divided by an island. Both bridges were poor, and a couple of the supporting ropes broke when the two man box was being carried over the first one. However it stood the strain alright and all got across safely. I was informed that a man had recently been killed at KINDA, following an argument with his brother over a pig, but as preliminary payments had been made I took no action. We moved on down the western side of the Wage, passing through alternating grass-lands and forest, eventually coming out at Somta shortly after rejoining the track previously used.

Feed sufficient for three meals was bought during the afternoon, amid the usual scenes of excitement. At one stage a brief altercation occurred between a carrier and a local over some feed, and much yelling followed, though I was pleased to note that the older men were very strong in their denunciation of their more volatile juniors who had started the commotion. Two pigs were again brought in but as before I refused to pay the exorbitant price demanded. Further talks with the villagers followed, and reference was made to the proposed station. Everyone indicated their interest, and they all wanted it to be put in in this area.

Walking time 5hrs. 10mins.

Monday 24th August, 1953.

SOMTA

No. 25

The patrol remained in camp today, while I took four constables with me to visit two reported airstrip sites, and also to attempt to contact the KWATE people. We left the track used on the outward journey at HUBUA, and stayed half an hour at WALHONA, which was the first of the suggested station sites. After a ladder had been built against a casuarina, and I had had a good look at the area, I realised it was absolutely hopeless, so we moved off down to NIPA via KWATE. By this time we shot a retinue of well over a hundred natives, so I sent some of them off to induce representatives of the Kwate faction to come to their village while I went down to NIPA. Once again I was impressed with the possibilities of Nipa as a station site, but was disappointed in the strip, which would involve considerable labour even for a light plane. What there is of it is excellent, but it is far too short. When we got back to Kwate we found that a few men had come in, so while the party had lunch, I gave them a long talk on what our plans and intentions were, and they agreed with me that it was far more satisfactory to remain in their villages when a patrol arrived, than to take to the bush for long periods. They said they were quite prepared to be quit of fighting, but were not ~~that~~ sure that the Ben people thought likewise. They added that they had no intention of getting mixed up in any further wars.

On arrival back at camp the results of the day's work were imparted to the assembled multitude, who were visibly and vociferously disappointed.

Very little food brought in, and rations were issued instead. Walking time 3hrs. 40mins.

Tuesday 25th August, 1953.

SOMTA - TOMBU

No. 26

Timetable

Dep. SOMTA	0435
At. HADOROTA	0750-0800
At UNGURE	0900-0910
At BEN	1000-1110
Arr. TOMBU	1145

The patrol returned by the track used on the outward trip, and on arrival at Tombu at 0930, a detachment of police were told off to accompany me down to Ben, while the remainder of the patrol personnel stayed here making camp. We went down to Ben in full view of that village, and saw several men in occupation. As we walked in however they all disappeared out of the back way, and we were left in possession. As they left they shouted over their shoulders that we were to take the pig they had left tied up and beyond. By dint of much vigorous shouting, they were induced to step before they got out of earshot, and the next hour was taken up with enticing them to come within talking range. We eventually succeeded, and once again I described what our wishes were. The people could not be induced to return to the village while we were there, but they said that if we took the pig that had been left tied up in exchange for the present I had left on the way out, that would put an end to hostilities between us and them, and the next time a patrol visited the area they would greet it as friends. After I had told them that I also wanted them to make the death payment involved in the recent fighting, and they ~~also~~ assured me that they would, the party was withdrawn, and as we left the villagers again took possession.

On return to Tombu, the Haranje people who had assembled there in my absence were told of the result of my negotiations, and to seal the tripartite pact, were given part of the (by then) butchered pig. The Haranje people were a bit dubious of the Ben assurances, but promised to follow them up.

What food was available was brought in for sale, but had to be augmented. A small pig for return to Kutabu was purchased. Walking time 3hrs. 40mins.

Wednesday 26th August, 1953.

TOMBU - AUGU

No. 27

Timetable

Dep. TOMBU	0640
ARR. HARANJE	0700
Cross Wago Riv.	0845-0940
ARR. AUGU	1235

The patrol followed the same track as used previously, and covered it in rather better time. A start has been made by the Augu Haranje people at clearing a proper track, and where it has been cut there is a vast improvement. V/C Gisu reported all well at Augu, and also the information that Mr. A.D.O. Wren had returned a few days previously from his patrol. Instructions were given on the construction of roads leading out of Augu on the main lines of communication, and also that a police barracks be built here.

Potatoes for half rations were purchased during the afternoon, as well as a little cabbage brought in by the women and children, who were all as irreproachable as usual. Walking time 4hrs. 30mins.

Thursday 27th August, 1953.

AUGU - TAGE

No. 28

Timetable

Dep. AUGU	0800-0835
At HARANIA Cr.	0830-0835
At KOPAKA Camp	1045-1100
At MUKI Riv.	1410-1430
ARR. TAGE	1600

Walking steadily with few halts, the patrol made good time back to TAGE. The Muki had descended a lot, and the usual ford was used, though the prisoners behaved like drowning mice in the waist deep water. On arrival at TAGE I reported to Mr. A.D.O. Wren, and after storing patrol equipment, all personnel were stood down.

END OF DIARY

SUMMARY

NATIVE AFFAIRS

One of the main objectives of this patrol was to contact the BEM people, who are the second principal in the HARANGE/BEM fighting, with a view to finalizing the dispute. It will be remembered that on my last visit to the area, I was unable to arrange a meeting between the two groups, with myself acting as mediator, due to the fear of retaliation demonstrated by the Bem faction. On this occasion, contact was made, and though it was not wholly satisfactory, I was given assurances that both sides would refrain from further warfare, and would initiate the first of the usual three payments made in matters of this kind. Though contact was made, I think it will be necessary for at least one further visit to be made by an Administration patrol before full relations are established with the Bem people. It seems unlikely that they will give any further trouble, judging by the respect in which they now hold Government patrols, and the establishment of a post at Mungana should also act as a stabilizing influence.

The area as a whole is quiet, though several areas were passed through in which heavy fighting had been in progress not long before our visit. The attitude with regard to fighting throughout the whole area, can best be described as one of honour before prudence. Perhaps neither side is keen on continuing with the fight, but by the same token it would not be consonant with dignity to stop it. This is best summed up by what I was told by the people in the vicinity of Mungana. They said: "We do not want to fight, but until there is something to stop us, we will continue to do so, because if we don't, other people will think we are not men."

Another factor is the unwillingness displayed by most natives to trust the other faction, and while the parties are fully armed and mistrustful of each other, incidents are bound to occur which can very easily lead to full-scale warfare. My impression is that this attitude has also prevailed in the Lwi Valley and areas adjacent to Mendi, and it is only recently that Administration intervention in these areas has been found by the natives themselves to be a sufficiently strong deterrent.

With more intensive patrolling, particularly in the Wago and Mendi Valleys, it should not be long before the natives realize that the decision as to whether or not they will go to war no longer rests with themselves, and that the risks of incurring the official wrath are not balanced by the satisfaction of slaying their neighbours. The Mungana post will accelerate this development considerably.

*...These are:-

- (i) A pig is usually slaughtered and distributed evenly between both sides as a sign that the fighting is at an end.
- (ii) Sometime later a dance is held, and large numbers of pigs are killed by both sides, in proportion to the number of dead they have lost.
- (iii) Lastly, and often many years after the fighting has ceased, the actual death payments are made, in which a certain number of Mother of Pearl shells are exchanged for each person killed. The actual number depends on the stature of the dead man within the community.

ANTHROPOLOGICAL

Linguistically speaking, the natives contacted by this patrol mostly belong to the same group. Dialectal changes were found between the Wago, Lwi and Mendi people, but the main language covers the whole area. In the upper Wago, in the vicinity of Mungana, the language changes and is replaced by HURI, though even here KAMUSI is used as a second or trade language.

The tribes passed through are as follows:-

- (i) AUGU Valley, WAGE Valley, and WAGE/NEMBI watershed -
OLA (WEIA) Tribe.

- (ii) NEMBI River to LAI River - ARON Tribe
- (iii) LAI River to MENDI River - KADOK Tribe
- (iv) Upper WAGE in vicinity of ANDAHARI and HAKONINA River junctions - Composite of OLA, ARON, and PUKPUK Tribes.

AS far as cultural changes are concerned, there is little difference to be found between the above named tribes. All these natives live in low houses, no more than five feet high at the ridge pole, made of split-slab walling, and thatched with blade-grass. All chimneys and interstices are packed with moss, and with a fire burning inside, it is like walking into a slow oven when one enters one of them. The construction is good, and provided they do not get burnt down, either accidentally (as often happens) or intentionally (nearly as often), I would give these houses a life of upwards of five years, and probably often ten. When a house is destroyed, it is usual to plant a small garden of delicacies (tobacco, and beans and other imported vegetables) in the fertile ashes of the old home.

TYPICAL GRASSLANDER'S HOUSE

The most noteworthy difference in the way of life of these people is their village life. The OLA tribe were the only natives struck who live in villages. These are groups of houses, often more than a dozen, built round a cleared dancing ground, and hidden from it in clearings in the cane grass. Often two houses are occupied by one family, the man and his male descendants living in one, while the womenfolk live in another nearby. This is by no means a rule, however, and the Huri living conditions were often found to be duplicated in this area.* However all other tribes contacted dispense with villages, and live in houses scattered apparently haphazardly over the countryside, though all owing allegiance to one dancing ground.

The style of dress and artifacts of these people have been described on numerous previous occasions, so I will confine myself to a few comments, and comparisons with the Huri natives. The hall mark of the Huri - his great decorated wig - is absent throughout most of this area, though it is present to a certain extent among the PUKPUK people. This tribe appears to be a descendant offshoot of the real HURI tribe, who have come in contact with the OLA people, adopting some of the latter's culture and retaining some of their own, with the result that they have turned into a sort of mongrel breed. While on the subject it is interesting to note that in the lower TARI area, where again there is an offshoot of the HURI tribe, this culture admixture has not occurred to nearly such a marked degree, and there are only minor digressions from the culture of the parent tribe in that area.

PINJ DANCING GROUND AND PATROL CAMP

To return to the style of dress, more often than not the men of the KAMUSI language group wear large mops of hair, sometimes held together in rough hair nets, or strips of bark or cloth, and sometimes not held together at all. I believe more attention is paid to the hair on festive occasions, but for the most part it does not seem to pose the cause for concern that it does with the Huri, with his perpetual touching up and decorating. For the rest, ornaments and dress are similar both for men and for women, and the

*...See Lake Kutubu P/R No.5 of 52/58, section "ANTHROPOLOGICAL".

accompanying photographs give a fair idea.

Legends.

The following stories were recounted to me by old men of KALIE Village, in the OIA tribal area, and are included in this report for what intrinsic interest they may possess.

HOW THE WHITE MAN CAME

"In the earliest days, the countryside was as it is now, though white people and brown people lived here in contentment together. One day, and with no warning or reason, there was a great convulsion of the earth, and the mountains fell into the valleys, and the earth shook, and the forests burned, and all the people were killed. All this happened very quickly, like the wink of an eye. However one white man, and one brown man" survived the catastrophe, and together they wandered over the desolated land. One day they came to a flat place, and decided that they would make a garden there and plant potatoes. When they had made the garden, they decided they would separate, and would meet again at the garden when the sweet potatoes were ripe, and whoever got their first was to wait for the other, and then they would dig and eat them together. However the brown man came back before the white man and was hungry, so he dug the potatoes and ate them. When the white man arrived, he was very angry, and asked

"Why didn't you wait for me as you said you would?"

"The brown man was frightened, and wouldn't answer, so the white man said

"I will go away now to my own place, and you will never be able to find me. One day, however, when I am no longer angry with you, I will come back and see how you are getting on, and then we will live together as we used to."

"Now the white people have come back, and are again living with us."

"...No names were known.

BUNGIAP AND LOST IMMORTALITY

"After the great catastrophe, BUNGIAP who with his wife survived the desolation, took his woman up to the top of Mt. LANAVI, where they made a house and lived there. While they were there, a son was born to them, whom they called 'HOMENJI' (This is interpreted as 'Mother Dead'). Bungiap told his wife that this child was to be made immortal, and to do this the woman was not to feed him on the breast, but instead Bungiap would feed him on water and the sap of a certain vine. Bungiap then went away to collect the things he needed for this, and while he was gone the woman's breasts grew very heavy, so she fed her child. When the man returned, he found out what had happened and was angry, since his plan that all the people who would be born in the days to come would be able to go up to the sky and back to earth whenever they wanted to had been thwarted. He sat down and thought out what to do, and then called out 'PIRAPIKJA' (This means 'Mother alive') but there was no answer. Then he called out 'Homenji' to which the woman answered 'yes'. As this indicated that the woman did not want immortality for her son, Bungiap suddenly disapp-

WOMEN OF THE LAI VALLEY

cared and went up into the sky where he now is, and he will not come to earth again, because it is the place of the dead.

"Now the descendants of Hemonji and the brown man in the first story are the Old people."

TOPOGRAPHY and COMMUNICATIONS.

Roads and Bridges.

Roads and bridges throughout the area are as they have always been - rough -, with the exception of a short stretch of the track between Augu and Maranje, on which a start has been made towards improvement. Eventually it is hoped to have clearly defined routes through to Mendi and Mungana from Kutubu, with regular staging points. As far as the Mendi/Kutubu L. of C. is concerned, it appears that the route followed by Mr. McLeod's patrol in June 1958 is the most satisfactory and easiest. Regular camps on this route are (1) Kapeka Ck. 3hrs 10mins., (2) Augu, 4hrs., (3) Maranje, 5hrs 20mins., (4) Kwate 3hrs., (5) Nag, 5hrs 30mins., and (6) Maruba, 6 hrs., and the six days shown here could probably be considerably reduced if necessary, and if good roads were available. The road to Mungana branches off from the Mendi road at Maranje, going via Kanje to Mungana in four days. A rest house has been built at Augu, and in time more rest houses will be built.

PARTY AT HODUA.

When permanent materials are available, a proper suspension bridge will be built across the Mabi river. In the meantime, since the river is fordable even when reasonably high, I do not think that the erection of a temporary bridge would be expedient.

Airfields.

As mentioned earlier, two sites were inspected by this patrol - NIRA and MUNGANA. The first, though ideally situated as far as a station site is concerned, with heavy population in the immediate vicinity, good water, timber, sand and gravel, and an excellent area for buildings, the strip itself is only about 500 yards of flat ground, with a rise and then a creek at one end, and scrub and a hilleck at the other. Mungana is a very good prospect for an airstrip, but the population round about is light, and the soil does not appear to be particularly productive, the chief vegetation being kumai. While the installation of a post there is under way, I think the bulk of food stuffs consumed will have to be imported.

VIEW UP THE WAGE VALLEY FROM BELOW KWATE

Topography.

The only portion of the country that this patrol crossed and that has not been reported on previously is the area between Lai and Wage Valleys, going via the Golewa Ck. This is a series of irregular valleys, similar to the country further south on the same watershed, though with a high valley wall to be negotiated before dropping down to the Wage River.

Generally, the country consists of cane grass and kumai valleys with the timber taking over about two thirds of the way up the valley walls.

The ranges separating these valleys are predominantly limestone. The Waga/Neabi watershed is probably the most fertile area struck; i.e. the area between Haranje and Ercala, and the Waga Valley as a whole seems considerably better country than the Mendi or Lai Valleys.

MEDICAL AND HEALTH.

There is very little to record under this heading. The most serious disease in the area is pneumonia, and three cases were treated by this patrol. One man who might or might not have had Hansen's Disease was seen, but it was impossible to verify this, and no attempt at treatment was made. I was later informed at Mendi that there is quite an amount of this sickness in the area.

Patrol personnel were as a whole healthy, though being un-acclimatized to the higher country crossed, numerous colds developed, resulting in a few cases of malaria and also some pneumonia.

As a whole the country is healthy and invigorating, and a thoroughly pleasant change from the rain forest round Lake Kutuba.

AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK.

The staple throughout the whole region is the sweet potato, augmented by native cabbages of several varieties, mima, sugar cane, bread fruit, pandanus and so on. The sweet potato grown is for the most part the small red variety, though the Okinawa type is gradually penetrating. European vegetable seed is being circulated from Mendi, and quite extensive French bean gardens were seen in the Lai Valley. Some tomatoes and English cabbage too were seen, and it should not be long before these gain a firm hold in the native diet. Soya beans are being grown extensively at Mendi, and I understand these too are to be circulated among the villages.

The soil is for the most part mediocre at best, and that in the Mendi Valley is downright poor. Potatoe gardens are not heavy yielding, though better varieties of plants will probably produce an improvement. As mentioned above the Waga area appeared the most fertile, and adequate feed was brought to the patrol, even though this is reported to be the off-season. The position was not so good in the Lai Valley, and I believe feed is hard to buy round Mendi. The large areas of Kunai grass seen probably give some indication of the lack of soil fertility in the area.

Livestock consists exclusively of pigs and dogs. The former are very healthy, and forming as they do one of the chief economic units in the local currency, are well tended. Right through the area they are very common, though in comparison with other parts of this District, an excessively high price is

demanded for them. Dogs are fairly common, and are kept chiefly as pets. Some very nice looking pups were seen, and are obviously regarded with such affection by their owners.

MENDI STATION FROM THE P/O'S RESIDENCE

VIEWS DOWN THE LAI VALLEY FROM HARPEA

MAP.

The attached sketch map is a modification of the four miles to the inch District Map, amended with such data as has been accumulated since the original map was drawn up in 1950. All new villages and rivers have been fixed either by time and compass traverses or by triangulation.



.....
C.E.T. Terrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.M.D.

04th September, 1953.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No. 1-33/54

APPENDIX "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No. 1260 1/Spl. AKURU

28 days

A thoroughly reliable member. Conduct and ability good. An excellent patrol policeman.

No. 8351 Const. WADI

28 days

Conduct and ability fair. Against my will I was obliged to use this man as interpreter, and being a young man, this gave him an enlarged idea of his own importance. With more experience he will develop into a steady member.

No. 4046 Const. MANIGOLI

28 days

Conduct and ability average. This and the remaining six members who accompanied the patrol were originally seconded to Kutubu for escort duties with the cancelled A.P.C. survey. A quiet and reliable man, who quickly learned his duties.

No. 1856 Const. VANUTAI

28 days

The senior constable accompanying the patrol, who carried out his duties efficiently and well. Will make a good N.C.C.

No. 8357 Const. JOHN

28 days

Conduct good, ability average. Steady, and does what he is told. Not brilliant.

No. 6332 Const. DOIWA

28 days

Probably the most outstanding member of the patrol police. A keen and efficient man, who cheerfully does more than his share.

No. 8118 Const. GABE


28 days

Conduct good, ability fair. Very young, and without previous patrol experience. Learns fast but scarcely suitable for promotion at this stage. I understand he is attending an N.C.C. course at Sogeri.

No. 8119 Const. HADAO

28 days

Much the same as Gabe. Good natured, and quietly does what he is told.


.....
C. S. T. Ferrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.N.G.

5th September, 1953.



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS Report No. 3 of 53/54

Patrol Conducted by C.E.T. TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

Area Patrolled (i) Lower TARI, (ii) MANANDA Basin, (iii) Northern NAMO.

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans NIL

R.P. & N.G.C. - 8
Natives N.M.O. - 1 Prisoners - 10
Carriers - 20

Duration—From 23/10/1953 to 21/11/1953

Number of Days 30

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No (i) 18.1.53

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services /19 (ii) Nil
(iii) 25.3.51

Medical NIL

Map Reference Sketch Map Attached.

Objects of Patrol (i) Consolidation of Administration Influence and Census,
(ii) Extension of Administration Influence
(iii) Census Check.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please. Copy to Mendi direct.

/ /19

Assistant District Commissioner Officer

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation £ NIL

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund £ NIL

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund £ NIL

2/11/53
Native
Renewal file

DS30-18-46

18th Dec, 1953.

The District Commissioner,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI

Patrol Report No. 3/53-24.

Mr. Patrol Officer C.E.T. Terrell's Report of his Patrol to Lower Tari, Mananda Basin and northern NAMO areas is acknowledged.

Mr. Terrell has obviously put much thought and care into producing a fine Report and sketch-map. Copies of the latter have been sent to Mendi, Lake Kutubu and Tari, as requested.

It is considered that valuable work was carried out on this Patrol in making and maintaining friendly contact with the native people and extending our knowledge of this part of your District. The Report indicates that the native attitude to the patrol party was generally one of willing co-operation and therefore most encouraging.

The initial work of extending Government influence among primitive people requires much patience and some setbacks are to be expected.

The first milestone of real significance, is, of course, when native communities can be induced to present themselves to the patrol officer for census purposes and village officials are selected.

A.A. Roberts
(A.A. Roberts),
Director, D.S.S.A.

c.c. Assistant District Officer,
LAKE KUTUBU.



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

30/18/46



In Reply Please Quote

No. 158/30-1/53

Sub-District Office,
TAGE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

9th December, 1953.

The Director of District Services,
PORT MCRESBY

PATROL REPORT No.3 of 53/54

This report was designed to provide basic information on the area lying on the western side of the Tagari River, between that river and the Karius Range and as far north as an extension west of the Tambera/Maribu line. Also it was desired to increase Administration influence in the Paus/Tambera/Maribu triangle. The inspection of the Namo-Uai was of a routine nature.

From all these aspects the patrol was quite satisfactory.

2. Pending an examination of the western side of the Tagari Valley from the Rumurumu end, it is too early to offer any recommendations as to the final boundaries that should be drawn between the Kutubu and Tari Sub-Districts in this area.

However at this stage it is known that those people who live on the southern side of the AVA River have close affiliations with the Namo people. These indeed gave way to the pressure of Namo migration and sold to that tribe much land where they are now living.


3. Mr. Terrell's specific recommendations for Village Constables will be forwarded under separate cover. I also concur with his suggested final disposition of Village Constables in the area.

The stage is rapidly being reached when these Tari people will be requested to take a share in the construction of the Moro airstrip. To that end attention is being paid to the selection of officials and census taking.

4. The incident mentioned by Mr. Terrell in the Patrol Diary of the 13th November was handled correctly in my view.

5. Could a copy of this patrol map be forwarded to the D.C., S.H.D., as well as to the A.D.O. Tari please, as well of course the normal two copies for this office.

c/c. D.C.,
S.H.D


.....a/ADG
E.D. WREN

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No.3 of 53/54

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.T. TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....(i) Lower TARI,
(ii) MANANDA Basin,
(iii) Northern NAMO.

PATROL PERSONNEL.....Europeans:
C.E.T. Terrell, O.I.C.

Natives:

R.P. & N.G.C. - 8
N.M.O. - 1
Carriers - 20
Prisoners - 10

DURATION.....23rd October, 1953 to 21st November, 1953 - 30 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(i) Consolidation of Administration Influence
and Census compilation,
(ii) Extension of Administration Influence,
(iii) Census Check.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch Map Attached.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report of Police personnel,
Appendix "B" - Report on Patrol equipment,
Appendix "C" - Account of TEGE-FAMI and -FURI
customs,
Appendix "D" - Census Statistics,
Appendix "E" - Map.

.....
C.E.T. Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

23rd November, 1953.

INTRODUCTION

The primary objective of this patrol was to ascertain the extent of the population and the nature of the country lying between the KARIUS Range to the west and the TAGARI (Kikori) River to the east, between MARIBU in the lower TARI area, and the IAKO PEAKS block. In patrol No.11 of 52/53, Mr. Wren, A.D.O., struck the fringes of this population along the southern side of the AVA (previously and erroneously "AWARA") River, on the HAWA Range, but was not able to assess its extent. This patrol concentrated its activities in what I have called the MANANDA Basin*, an area covering possibly 80 square miles, which appears to be the main centre of population to the west of the Tagari River, south of Mts. GIGIRA and PARIBARI. This group proved to belong to what has now come to be known as the HURI tribe, with customs, social structure, and nature of life exactly similar. Though this was the first time the group has been contacted, they proved very friendly, and sincerely agreed on the undesirability of their perennial feuding, and said they would stop it. That latter point however remains to be seen.

Mr. Murdoch, A.D.O. Tari, was contacted at TAMBERA, where Huri ex-prisoner repatriates were handed over, and intra-district matters discussed. While in the lower Tari, the patrol moved right round the area and completed the initial census, with the exception of the BENARIA Valley and upper BAKARE - areas which will be dealt with in due course.

On recrossing the Tagari River, an initial census was compiled at HAINANA, and the villages in the NAMO tribal area not previously checked by Patrol No.9 of 52/53 received routine visits.

The patrol on the whole was satisfactory, all direct objectives being accomplished, with no untoward incidents.

*.....Dealt with more fully under section "Topography".

DIARY

Friday 23rd October, 1953.

TAGE to No.3 Camp. No.1

Timetable

Dep. TAGE	0710
Arr. No.1 Camp	0915-0930
At No.2 Camp	1150-1215
Arr. No.3 Camp	1345
<u>Travelling time: 5hrs 55mins.</u>	

Off to a good start, with the patrol board the new double canoe, with two smaller canoes to act as ferries up the TIBI Ck. A brief halt to organize carriers at No.1 Camp, then steadily through to No.3 where camp was made. One of the ex-prisoners down with toothache, which later cleared up, but otherwise a most auspicious start.

Rations issued all round.

Saturday 24th October, 1953.

No.3 Camp to PAUA. No.2

Timetable

Dep. No.3 Camp	0635
At No.4 Camp	0825-0850
At WAGE Ck.	1020-1045
Arr. PAUA	1155
<u>Walking time: 4hrs 30mins.</u>	

A bright morning, with everyone but a couple of the ex-prisoners keeping up well. Camp made at Puaa, after a halt en route. Much of

the afternoon devoted to a long discussion on the relative positions in the community of a Village Constable and a Councillor. A summons issued to all the locals to meet tomorrow to select a mutually acceptable candidate for Village Constable. HINI also signified his willingness to become a trainee medical orderly for his village.

Crowds of men, women and children in with food in the evening, and more than ample was purchased. There must have been 30 women and girls in camp, and they were the largest group I've seen round here.

Sunday 25th October, 1953.

PAUA

No.3

Remained in camp for the day, and during the mornings discussions, GOTOMA, a Motuan speaking sub-clan leader was selected as V/C candidate, with all parties agreeing on the choice. Once again the reason for choosing a relatively unimportant man as Village Constable was explained, and all agreed that the actual head man should not receive Government pay, for his services to the community. Hini became doubtful about his prospective job, and I explained fully what would be expected of him.

Food much the same as yesterday was bought quickly and amicably.

Monday 26th October, 1953.

PAUA to PURIBA

No.4

Timetable.

Dep. PAUA	0640
Arr. KONDARI Riv.	0845
Arr. HOMA	0855
Arr. PURIBA	0910

Walking time: 2hrs 30mins.

The patrol moved north-west today descending into the Kondari Valley further north than on the track leading direct to IANGOBI. We moved through the country of the ARI (mostly extinct) and KEIA clans, Homa village belonging to the first, and Puriba to the second. The combined census was taken, with better results than expected. A recent disturbance involving MINE, the ex-interpreter from Kutubu was thrashed out, and the ill-feeling that resulted appears to have largely resolved itself. The whole business appears to have started with a misunderstanding, and the argument quickly settled while I mediated.

A house burnt down just above the camp today, as a result of a carelessly left fire (the occupants were visiting the camp at the time), and a sow and her family were prematurely roasted. The still smoking remains were offered to the patrol, but when I refused to pay a tomahawk for them, they were taken away again, as the barterer said that they didn't belong to him and the owner would think he had been swindled if he only got a knife for what had been a big pig, though he agreed that what was left was not worth a tomahawk. Many women and children in to the food mart, which was a good sign for an initial visit, and again plenty of food was available.

Tuesday 27th October, 1953.

PURIBA to IANGOBI

No.5

Timetable

Dep. PURIBA	0645
Arr. PORORO Ck.	1025
Arr. PAWGONO Ck.	1140-1230
At. MARUBA Ck.	1415-1425
Arr. IANGOBI	1510

Walking time: 7hrs 0mins.

The patrol climbed up steeply over the Valley wall, just above Homa, then cutting across the end of the BADIBI Range to the PORORO Ck. Over the IAGUA Range, meeting the usual Iangobi/Paua track on the other side. A break for lunch followed at the Pawgeno River, and then on steadily

to camp at IANGOBI. On arrival I was told that Mr. Murdoch had arrived at Tamera, and so I decided to go straight through, instead of halting at Pai and Kuieri on the way. All except a small rear guard of the Iangobis are away hunting in the Iokorobu area, and so there was no point in taking an additional census here.

Food bought here had to be eked out with rations.

Wednesday 28th October, 1953.

IANGOBI to TAMBERA

No.6

Timetable

Dep. IANGOBI	0650
At. PAI	0755-0805
At KUIERI	0845
Arr. TAGUNI (IDI) Ck.	0930
Arr. TAMBERA	1100

Walking time: 3hrs 45mins.

Camp was broken in light rain, which stopped shortly after we got under weigh. At the Idi Ck. I met Cpl. KOMBAPA from the Rume detachment, with a note from Mr. Murdoch, suggesting that I purchase food at Kuieri, as very little available at Tamera. However I decided to risk it, and moved on, meeting Mr. Brown, C.P.O., who was on his way to Kuieri to see what he could buy. On arrival at Tamera I met Mr. Murdoch, and discussions of local interest followed. In the afternoon a complaint was made ~~from~~ by a small boy, that one of the Tari carriers had appropriated a shell belonging to him, and this matter was thrashed out, everyone being questioned.

With the food that Mr. Brown secured at Kuieri, and what I bought locally, there was enough for both patrols, without having to expend carried rations. Some tension was present in the atmosphere.

Thursday 29th October, 1953.

TAMBERA

No.7

The Rumurusu patrol left at 0800 hrs. on the journey back, while I remained in camp. Carriers were put on to planting a small garden with European vegetables, and the fences round the area purchased as the government camp site were cleaned up and strengthened. A drain previously started by Mr. Murdoch was continued on the unfenced side. With the carriers' barracks which were completed yesterday, there is now enough accommodation to house two patrols, all grass huts built at various times by Mr. Murdoch's patrols.

Talks were held with the people who drifted in in larger numbers than yesterday, and some of the disturbing influences were ironed out. The question of a V/C for this village was raised, but the matter was not settled conclusively*.

Once again adequate food was bought, with some women attending the sales. The compensation left by Mr. Murdoch was handed over to the small boy, and the matter was closed.

Friday 30th October, 1953.

TAMBERA to ARIBU

No.8

Timetable.

Dep. TAMBERA	0650
Arr. EGARE	0745-0810
Arr. NAWA Ck.	0830
Arr. ARIBU	0910

Walking time: 1hr 55mins.

A short day through to the Bakare River, via Egare. Camp was made at Aribu on the banks of the Bakare, in a clearing adjacent to where a feast in honour of a dead headman was in progress. 19 pigs were slaughtered, dismembered, and started to steam in the ground ovens just after we arrived, and when the excitement was over, I tried to compile a census. A

* See Section "Village Officials"

most frustrating business at best of times in this area, but when natives from five different villages are all present at the same time, and haven't the remotest idea of what a line up is, and even if they knew, couldn't keep still for five minutes anyway, the whole process drives one to the verge of distraction. Eventually recorded most of those from the lower Bakare who were present, but there must have been many absentees.

When the pigs were being cut up and distributed after being cooked, some fool of a Kuieri man twanged his bow string, which in this area under similar circumstances usually means a fight. Though I was standing by at the time I did not see who it was, and in the general confusion that followed, the Kuieri element decided that discretion was the better part of valour, and hot-footed it for home. A lengthy harangue followed, but as the people responsible for the incident had left, nothing more was done. The presence of the patrol probably prevented bloodshed.

Later on, when calm was again restored, adequate food was bought from local garden owners.

Saturday 31st October, 1953.

ARIBU to HANGABU (HOI'IA) No.9

Timetable

Dep. ARIBU	0655
Top PENDENA Range.	0735
Arr. MARUMBA(PENDENA or TENDE)	0815.
Arr. HANGABU	0840

Walking time: 1hr 45mins.

Camp was made after ^{walking} south from ARIBU, in a clearing lower down the same spur on which I made camp on my last visit to this area. I had heard earlier that a woman had been attacked by a Benaria man in this area, and while camp was being made, with N.M.O. KENAI I went to have a look at her. She was cut up a bit, but not too badly and when the wounds had been cleaned and dressed she looked much further from Death's door. She was in a horrible mess when we found her, and it speaks volumes for the constitution of these people that she wasn't dead of gangrene or tetanus. She was given anti-Tetanus injections, and a large dose of penicillin, and will almost certainly recover. The story of the incident is rather amusing, and also indicative of the change coming over the area.

It appears that a Benaria man was hunting wild pigs in the nearby bush, but hadn't had any luck. He came to a clearing and saw the woman working in a garden with her pig nearby. To avoid going back empty-handed, he decided he would take her pig, but the woman had other ideas, and when he tried to run off with it, the woman went for him, yelling blue murder. She grabbed his wig with both hands and got his head under her arm; he couldn't shake her off though he tried biting, scratching and choking her, and was nearly getting strangled himself for his efforts. Eventually he stabbed her with his bone dagger. (this was the major wound) but it wasn't till her men folk arrived that she let him go. Previously the man would have got short shift, but on this occasion he was told to go away, as they did not want to kill him, and to pay a pig as compensation. The man went, muttering imprecations and refusing to think of compensation. I then sent word that if he didn't pay, he would find himself in still less comfortable circumstances.

I compiled the census in the afternoon, and a mutually acceptable V/C Candidate - HEWARA - was chosen. A few women in with food, but our requirements were fully met.

SUNDAY Sunday 1st November, 1953

HANGABU to PAI No.10

Timetable

Dep. HANGABU	0700
Cross IDI Ck.	0725
Arr. PAI	0750

Walking time: 50mins.

Across the Idi Valley, to camp at Pai, and when the mist lifted, Hangabu was visible at a bearing of 11.5°. The previously uncensused people who came in to camp were recorded, but many of them had left the day before to go hunting. The few Kuieris who turned up were also recorded. TARO was selected from this village as V/C candidate, and talks on this matter and on other subjects followed later in the day. An account of fighting across the Tagari River was received which will be looked into when we get there.

As supplies of big trade were getting low, I decided to concentrate on buying in small lots. This proved a new and not very popular departure, and rice had to be issued for the morning meal.

Monday 2nd November, 1953.

PAI to KUIERI

No.11

Timetable

Dep. PAI

0705

Arr. KUIERI

0740

Walking time: 35mins,

Moving down the Idi Valley, the patrol was preceded by two idiots who yodelled and shouted and made derisive gestures. What they were about was not quite clear, and I took no action. I heard rumours that everyone was preparing to flee for some reason - probably guilty consciences - and so told a few women who were gigging kaimas near the camp site that if they did, we should be obliged to help ourselves. However several groups drifted in during the day, and they were censused as they arrived. Later everyone who came into camp was given a thorough dressing down for the recent aggravating incidents they have been responsible for, and most of them had the grace to look sheepish.

Adequate food was bought, mostly in small lots, and several women were present at the food buying. HEWARA from Hoi'it joined the patrol here, to start his training course.

Tuesday 3rd November, 1953.

KUIERI to MARIBU

No.12

Timetable

Dep. KUIERI

0645

Arr. MURUAKO

0755

Arr. MARIBU

0830

Walking time: 1hr 45mins

We climbed out of the Idi Valley proper, and onto the HOMABU Range, moving through alternating scrub and old gardens to Maribu. Word was sent out to the three villages in this group - MURUAKO, MARIBU and MAGABI - to come in for the census, but the result was disappointing. The camp site commands a fine view of the whole lower Tari area, and I spent some time checking mapping information, and revising previous sketches.

The question of the old fighting with the OTOMA River Namos was gone into, and thought the Maribus were involved, the originators of the fighting were the HUGU Clan of POGORARI in the lower Paua Valley, and the ARUMA clan only acted as helpers.

Talks on the fighting across the River followed, and these people say virtuously it is nothing to do with them. An ex-carrier was given an axe due to him, but ANDABE, the second man who was owed an axe has migrated to the Huri Basin. A pig was bought, along with adequate food for our requirements. Preparations were made in the evening for sending a line of carriers. I no longer need back to the station in the morning.

*.....For original reference to this fighting, see Kutubu P/R No.11 of 52/53, pp 46, by Mr. Wren, A.D.O.

Wednesday 4th November, 1953

MARIBU to HIRADIMA

No.13

Timetable

Dep. MARIBU	0640
Arr. MAGABI	0655
Cross TAGARI by TIBITIBI Bridge	0845-1215
Top PINDIJE Range	1305-1320
Arr. HIRADIMA Lake	1430
Arr. " Camp	1500

Walking time: 4hrs 35mins.

Slightly delayed getting the Kutubu party on the way, the patrol then moved a little further down the Homabu Range, before starting a steep descent to the Tagari just beyond Magabi. On arrival at the Tibitibi Bridge it was found to be a new structure, but not particularly strong and some time was spent reinforcing it. There was a feast in progress just above here yesterday, with representatives from both sides of the river present, and some fears were held that the group from over the river might cut the bridge after hearing of the patrol's presence. I had sent two police down yesterday to check on the bridge, but they had been stopped by local natives and told this story, and they wisely returned. As a result of this word of the patrol's presence probably did not get through. The bridge itself is a marvel of native engineering, being all of 60 yards across. Had it been cut, it would have meant a long detour for us. The river here has a bed of between 60 and 100 yards across, between limestone walls and pour along at 12 or 14 knots. In the middle the bridge is only a few feet above water level when being crossed, and apparently often gets washed away. After a certain amount of jibbing, the whole patrol crossed safely with the loss of nothing more serious than someone's bamboo pipe. A sharp climb followed up the other wall of the gorge, to the top of the Pindiye range, and then across unexpectedly flat country to camp at Hiradima. This was on the creek of the same name which flows into Hiradima Lake - a stretch of water, pear shaped, about 20 yards by 30, which appeared decidedly unhealthy, and was reported to swam with mosquitoes. Its only oddity was that I was told it didn't have an exit. This did not seem worth checking.

Rations issued to all personnel.

Thursday 5th November, 1953.

HIRADIMA to TAGIRUATENDA

No.14

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0655
Arr. AGOTANE Ck.	0830
Arr. PADITE Clearings	1005-1025
Arr. AVIA Falls	1100-1110
Arr. TAGIRUATENDA	1230

Walking time: 4hrs 50mins.

Crossing the Hiradima Ck. once more, the patrol moved slightly north of west over flattish country interspersed with old garden, skirting the base of Mt. TIMAKU (Landslide Mtn.). We were delayed considerably having to cut through tangled undergrowth covering the track, particularly near old gardens. This area was fairly heavily populated at one time, but due to fighting and so on, the population has moved back into the Mananda Basin.

Shortly after resting in the Padite clearings we came to the Avia River, just below where it plunges over a 200' cliff in a spectacular waterfall. The top of the cliff has been cut away by a series of landslides, and the river bed consists of masses of huge rocks and conglomerate boulders. After a halt to take some photographs, the patrol climbed up the AGIRABA range, for the most part over an old landslide. Further round on this and the UBAIJE ranges are the landslides that earned for this block its name. A halt was called at the top, where we got our bearings from the glorious panorama laid out below us, looking back over the country we have crossed. The patrol then moved on through a thin belt of scrub, before coming out at the extreme eastern end of the Mananda Basin. To begin with, the first local natives we saw were nervous of the patrol, but while camp was being made more than 50 men came in to watch proceedings. Once over their initial shy-

Wednesday 4th November, 1953

MARIBU to HIRADIMA

No.13

Timetable

Dep. MARIBU	0640
Arr. MAGABI	0655
Cross TAGARI by TIBITIBI Bridge	0845-1215
Top PINDIJE Range	1305-1320
Arr. HIRADIMA Lake	1430
Arr. " Camp	1500

Walking time: 4hrs 35mins.

Slightly delayed getting the Kutubu party on the way, the patrol then moved a little further down the Homabu Range, before starting a steep descent to the Tagari just beyond Magabi. On arrival at the Tibitibi Bridge it was found to be a new structure, but not particularly strong and some time was spent reinforcing it. There was a feast in progress just above here yesterday, with representatives from both sides of the river present, and some fears were held that the group from over the river might cut the bridge after hearing of the patrol's presence. I had sent two police down yesterday to check on the bridge, but they had been stopped by local natives and told this story, and they wisely returned. As a result of this word of the patrol's presence probably did not get through. The bridge itself is a marvel of native engineering, being all of 60 yards across. Had this been cut, it would have meant a long detour for us. The river here has a bed of between 60 and 100 yards across, between limestone walls and pour along at 12 or 14 knots. In the middle the bridge is only a few feet above water level when being crossed, and apparently often gets washed away. After a certain amount of jibbing, the whole patrol crossed safely with the loss of nothing more serious than someone's bamboo pipe. A sharp climb followed up the other wall of the gorge, to the top of the Pindiye range, and then across unexpectedly flat country to camp at Hiradima. This was on the creek of the same name which flows into Hiradima Lake - a stretch of water, pear shaped, about 20 yards by 30, which appeared decidedly unhealthy, and was reported to swarm with mosquitoes. Its only oddity was that I was told it didn't have an exit. This did not seem worth checking.

Thursday 5th November, 1953.

HIRADIMA to TAGIRUATENDA

No.14

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0655
Arr. AGOTANE Ck.	0830
Arr. PADITE Clearings	1005-1025
Arr. AVIA Falls	1100-1110
Arr. TAGIRUATENDA	1230

Walking time: 4hrs 50mins.

Crossing the Hiradima Ck. once more, the patrol moved slightly north of west over flattish country interspersed with old garden, skirting the base of Mt. TIMAKU (Landslide Mtn.) We were delayed considerably having to cut through tangled undergrowth covering the track, particularly near old gardens. This area was fairly heavily populated at one time, but due to fighting and so on, the population has moved back into the Mananda Basin.

Shortly after resting in the Padite clearings we came to the Avia River, just below where it plunges over a 200' cliff in a spectacular waterfall. The top of the cliff has been cut away by a series of landslides, and the river bed consists of masses of huge rocks and conglomerate boulders. After a halt to take some photographs, the patrol climbed up the AGIRABA range, for the most part over an old landslide. Further round on this and the UBALJE ranges are the landslides that earned for this block its name. A halt was called at the top, where we got our bearings from the glorious panorama laid out below us, looking back over the country we have crossed. The patrol then moved on through a thin belt of scrub, before coming out at the extreme eastern end of the Mananda Basin. To begin with, the first local natives we saw were nervous of the patrol, but while camp was being made more than 50 men came in to watch proceedings. Once over their initial shy-

ness they were very friendly, and when later I spoke to them about fighting and our attitude towards it, the talk was very well received. The two clans living in this area are the URA and MAI'IA, the village of the latter being KARUNA.

Plenty of food was bought for small trade though no women appeared. Two were digging potatoes nearby when we arrived, and though not unduly perturbed, they wandered off later.

Friday 6th November, 1953.

TAGIRUATENDA to TAGORE

No.15

Timetable

Dep. TAGIRUATENDA	0700
Arr. TURIPARI Ck.	0730
Arr. TAGORE	0820

Walking time: 1hr 20mins

A little further to the WNW, over patches of bog, scrub, gardens and clearings. Near houses the track was well cleared, but for the most part it was the typical Tari track. Camp was made near a small group of houses, belonging to the people who were responsible for the death of KERAGARI's father, the former being a man from Beuarua and Maribu who when he heard of the patrol was crossing to the Mananda area asked if he could accompany it to get compensation for this death. The killing was the result of marriage payment being given to only one group of the ~~families~~ ^{women's} relatives and one of those who considered themselves slighted shot the groom shortly afterwards. The matter was thrashed out when camp had been erected, and those responsible agreed to pay compensation. In the afternoon three large pigs, ten strings of cowrie shell, and nine small pigs were assembled, and handed over to KERAGARI. Both sides professed themselves satisfied and the incident is now closed. Keragari presented me with one of his pigs as a token of esteem, so I gave him an M.O.P. shell on the same basis. He also gave half a pig to the Huri carriers.

I gave a rifle demonstration to the assembled men after the business had been finalised, and all were suitably impressed. They said that though they had heard of our rifles they didn't believe them till now, and had thought them pieces of wood. I was told while I was at Tagore that the fighting between this group and the TAI'IA further north had just finished, and the initial pig killing was in progress, so beyond saying a few words on the matter took no further action. Apparently the locals are in the habit of leaving their villages in the morning, racing through to the battle-ground, going to battle in the middle of the day, and then going home to bed. Shades of the Crusades.

An amusing incident occurred during food buying in the evening. One old man put the salt he had asked for down on top of the food he had sold, and refused to accept it. Asked why, he said it wasn't the same as Huri salt, so I gave him half a tea spoonfull to try. He put it all in his mouth at once, and was very nearly sick on the spot. Great mirth, and no more doubters. A great deal of food was quickly bought, mostly in small lots. A very well fed camp.

Saturday 7th November, 1953.

TAGORE to KUMU

No.16

Timetable

Dep. TAGORE	0910
At PARANDA	1045-1115
Arr. WAGUBA Riv.	1210
Arr. KUMU (IMINI Clan)	1230

Walking time: 2hrs 50mins.

The patrol moved in a semicircle along the PARANDA Range, to camp just over the WAGUBA River, in country belonging to the IMINI Clan. The Waguba is the only stream leading directly out of the Mananda Basin, its course running through a break in the Paranda Range. About ten yards

wide, we crossed it by a well made hump-back bridge, then moving through many gardens and scattered houses, to make camp at KUMU. Once again the people were very shy, but by dint of much shouting, they started to drift in, and by the afternoon 60 or 70 men were in camp. The fighting reported between this group and the LEBE people of IAPPA mentioned by Mr. Wren* was investigated, and these people claim that the other side killed one of their fight leaders, but no other death occurred. However, they (the IMINIs) had burnt LEBE houses and destroyed gardens. As both sides would be represented at the TEGEFAMI ceremony to be held at TIBINA, which I had heard about, I told them the matter would be discussed there. General talk followed, with considerable interest displayed. Self a great attraction, and as is usual in this country a swarm of canaques settled round my tent watching every move.

Food in great abundance was produced, so much in fact that a three-quarter filled mail bag had to be refused. A pig was bought after a certain amount of haggling. These people value their food and stock rather higher than do the people in the Huri Basin. The pig was duly shot much to the awe of the populace. Weekly issues distributed to all personnel.

P/R L.O. N.S. 12/53

Sunday 8th November, 1953.

KUMU to TIBINA

No.17

Timetable

Dep. KUMU	0710
Cross WAGUBA Riv.	0755-0820
Arr. TIBINA	0920
	<u>Walking time: 1hr 35mins.</u>

The patrol moved SSW to begin with, again coming to the Waguba Riv., which this time was not bridged, and as it was rather too deep to ford, we spent some time building a temporary bridge. There are very few large trees once one leaves the scrub, and we had to use saplings. On the other side of the river we moved more or less due south, crossing the BAGUA Marsh, which covers the whole of the floor of the Mananda Basin. It is dead level for miles, with patches of swamp grass, and miniature pine groves, all growing in the from ankle to knee deep swamp. On reaching the other side of the swamp, we paused for a while to let locals get ahead of us with word of our arrival, and then moved on to Tibina, to make camp the other side of the ground which had been cleared for the dancing. This village is on the base of the ADJAKA Range, which forms the southern rim of the Basin, and only a few feet above the swamp.

During the morning, while camp was being built, several hundred natives from round about came in for the second day of dancing, and were a very impressive sight as they thundered past the camp. Later on it was a hard job to keep them interested in what they had come for, and not to swarm round the camp. The dancing did not last very long, and when it was over I spoke to as many of the people as I could keep together.

In the afternoon I closeted myself with LIRUARI, the Master of Ceremonies for the whole TEGE ceremony, and started gathering information about it. He is an extremely influential gentleman, and the only person in this area who can institute a Tege dance.

Later on I bought food which was to last for four days. I was told politely but firmly that as these people were the hosts in this dance, they would not have time later on to spare in bringing in food. Several women also produced their bundles of greens and so on and were told that we heartily encouraged this practice. Each was given a small present.

Monday 9th to Wednesday 11th November, 1953

TIBINA

Nos.18-20

The patrol remained three days at Tibina, gathering information on the Tege ceremony and dances, spreading Governmental propaganda, and generally establishing sound and friendly relations with these extremely hospitable and friendly people. Dancing took place regularly and the culmination of the ceremony occurred on Tuesday night. Though so co-operative, the

excitableness of these people, and their complete lack of inhibitions was demonstrated on Wednesday morning. At the conclusion of the actual Tege-Fami (a more detailed description of the whole ceremony appears in Appendix "C" of this report), a battle is held between the single and married men of the community, each side being armed with thin and resilient switches, and to begin with the young men had ~~massacred~~ massacred their elders, but just as dawn was breaking, the latter made a comeback and routed the youngsters. At this stage I had gone to bed, having been up all night, when I was told that the young men had got nasty over their defeat and had fired some arrows, fortunately without hitting anyone. I stormed out, but the youngsters had taken to their heels, and so merely demonstrated my disapproval to those who remained. Things quietened down quickly, and everyone was back by mid day, when the pigs were slaughtered and started to roast. They were all most apologetic about the incident, and said they got carried away. Later the same day a meeting was held and the Government's attitude towards fighting again declaimed, and everyone agreed whole heartedly that it would be a good thing to give it up. Then one after the other several of the clan leaders got up and said that they would not fight anymore, and all appeared absolutely sincere. LIBUARI was given a special talk about our aims, and he said he fully agreed, and promised to do what he could to help. He is an outstanding native, with great natural dignity and much authority in this area. Future patrols would do well to cultivate him further. Before I left, I gave him a small present as a gesture of good-will. I considered it a compliment when he called me "MAMBU" (older brother), but I emphasized that the Governmental role was more paternal than fraternal.

Thursday 12th November, 1953.

TIBINA to TOBO

No.21

Timetable

Dep. TIBINA	0650
Cross WAGUBA Riv.	0755
Halt MAROBA	0810-0830
Arr. TOBO (TOBANI Clan)	0855
<u>Walking time: 1hr 45mins</u>	

The patrol moved up onto the ADJAKA range today, at the extreme South-western corner of the basin, and I was told that the country further west belongs to the TUGURA people, a generic name applied to all who don't happen to be Huris. On arrival at camp about 40 locals came in and locked on, but later for some reason they all left again and did not return. I spent some time pacifying an extremely aged gentleman, apparently in an advanced state of senility, who seemed to be convinced I was there to take him across the Styx. It may have been his influence that sent the rest of the men off, or merely their desire to return to the dancing at TIBINA. I spent some time gathering topographical information, and also on the whereabouts of roads leading across the KARIUS Range.

A little food bought from natives from lower down the range who came with us. Had to be augmented with rations.

Friday 13th November, 1953.

TOBO to KAWANI

No.22

Timetable

Dep. TOBO	0650
Arr. WAGUBA Riv.	0705
Halt MUGWA	0740-0930
" TIDABE	1120-1140
Arr. AVIA Ck.	1145
Arr. " " (2nd Time)	1305
Arr. KAWANI	1315
<u>Walking time: 4hrs 15mins.</u>	

To begin with the patrol moved south, then south east down the AVIA Valley. A halt was made at MUGWA to try and contact natives responsible for another small feud that had been reported to me, and a pig was handed

over to the man who had claimed it. This was not a full payment, but the remainder of the people responsible were reported to be away hunting. A small group of them were come upon at TIDABE, but they fled on the patrol's arrival.

The country after leaving the cleared garden area on the edge of the Mananda Basin, consists of heavy moss forest, and a series of irregular ridges, before coming to old and deserted clearings at the very head of the AVIA River. Just after leaving Tidabe, we crossed the AVIA, immediately striking into limestone ridges - for the first time since leaving the Kikori. The AVIA valley is not clearly defined, and indeed the river moves underground for part of its course, a fact that I realized when we came to the AVIA the second time, apparently on the wrong side. At this spot it was bridged, and on crossing we came almost immediately to garden ground belonging to the ARO Clan, and a little further on made camp.

During the afternoon it was reported to me that a local woman had been molested by one of the patrol personnel, and the woman and her husband duly appeared. A line up was held, and TARO, the PAI V/C Candidate accused. Intensive questioning followed, and though I was reasonably sure that Taro was responsible, there was insufficient evidence to charge him. The woman was given compensation (no actual assault had occurred), and Taro was given a concentrated lecture.

Talks held with the people in the evening, after I had bought enough food for our needs. I was told that the IMINI people were coming here to arrange the payments to be made with the LEBEs who are now living near this area, so I decided to remain in camp here tomorrow.

Saturday 14th November, 1953.

KAWANI

No.23

The stay at Kawani proved abortive, as I heard during the morning that far from wishing to make compensation payments, the LEBE clan had mostly run away on learning that the patrol was waiting to mediate in the matter. In addition to this I heard that the IMINI people had gone to help their neighbours, who had restarted the fight with the TAI'IA group. Apparently the feast signifying the end of the fighting was in progress, when a Tai'ia man who had previously been wounded, died. The battle started up again in earnest, both sides calling in their allies. So much for the assurances I had received that that particular group had no further desire to fight. I considered taking action to stop the fighting, but decided against it since this is the first patrol to the area, and no direct sanctions had been promulgated. As a result of this I learned in the afternoon from a very polite message, that the Imini were otherwise engaged, and would not be able to come through to Kawani for a few days.

Two pigs were brought in for ^{sale}, only one of which I bought, as my supply of tomahawks was very low. Crowds of women and girls appeared at the food buying, which rather surprised me, considering yesterday's incident. However all were in high fettle, and not in the least shy. The fact that both days they all received small gifts may have had something to do with this. Our food requirements were fully met.

A rumour was received here that there is another patrol in the Mananda Basin. One occasion when Bush Telegraph appears to have gone haywire.

Sunday 15th November, 1953.

KAWANI to PARIawe

No.24

Timetable.

Dep. KAWANI	0645
Arr. HUNGUBI'IA (IAPPA Clearings of LEBE Clan)	0945-1005
At MARIpANDA (TOBE Clan)	1150-1235
Arr. PARIawe	1330
Walking time: 5hrs 40mins.	

After following the AVIA for a while, we left it we it started to swing further away to the north east, and cut across a series of ridges, all forming part of the HAWA Range. We reached the old clearings of the LEBE

Clan at 0830, and these continued with breaks to HUNGUBI'IA, where a halt was called. Mr. Wren camped at this village on his way back from across the KARIUS Range, this being the first of the population in this area that he struck. In comparison with the Mananda Basin, it is very light indeed, and by no means an indication of that further north. Camp was made at PARIWE, shortly after crossing out of the Avia watershed and into the Ava (Awara) drainage area. This stream is a disconcerting one, as lower down it is fairly large. However it has a very short course, swelling rapidly with numerous largish tributaries, draining off Mts. HAWA and TIMAKU. The Avia is a much larger river, though it does not carry the same volume of water.

Pariawe is sited more or less opposite the N-western end of TIMAKU and commands a fine view of the UBALJE and AGIRABA Ranges, with their spectacular landslides and waterfalls. Also visible are the large mountains on the Humphries Range. The TOBE people occupy this area, and it was a great relief ~~that~~ to be told that they are not fighting anyone, and havn't any unpaid compensation to cla'n. They appear to act as middlemen in the NAMO-to-HURI trade route, and say that though they never go anywhere they often have visitors. In point of fact there were two men from the Namo-Uri in the village when I arrived, but they were advance guards of the party I had sent to Hainana with extra rations before I left Kutubu.

Most of the people from this area were reported to be still away at Tibina, attending the dance, so not much food was bought. Some people arrived in in the late evening, reporting that they had just left the dance which was now over.

Monday 16th November, 1953. PARIWE to KIKORI Camp. No. 25

Timetable

Dep. PARIWE	0650
Arr. MOGABAI Ck.	0850
At. HEORA Ck.	1020-1035
At. TEBENARI Ck.	1200-1220
Arr. Camp	1250
<u>Walking time: 5hrs 25mins</u>	

Still walking down the Ava Valley, the patrol passed through a belt of bush, then into the TAMBERUMA clearings of the TOBE Clan. These we left at 0715, and walked steadily through bush over noticeably rougher limestone, crossing three large streams and several small ones, all flowing into the Ava. Camp was made in Mr. Wren's old camp site, and the afternoon was devoted to clearing a lookout over the Kikori, which flows in an open bed 100 feet or so below the camp. On the other side of the river are sheer cliff faces, climbing away to the HAMABU Range. We were just about opposite where the Maruba River flows through a narrow crack to join the Kikori.

The two Namos were sent on to Hainana to alert the people there. Full rations issued.

Tuesday 17th November, 1953. KIKORI Camp to HAINANA No. 26

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0645
Arr. HAINANA	0945
<u>Walking time: 3hrs 0mins.</u>	

A short day down the Kikori, over a badly overgrown track, where several windfalls had to be cut through. On arrival the census was compiled, with rather better results than expected. This group is a breakaway, and has not been in existence very long. The OTOMA/PAI fighting was discussed, and I was told that the originators of the fighting in this tribe are the TIRIGI clan now living at SISIRIA. The V/C candidates for Paua and Pai were spoken to about the matter, and told that when they return to their villages, their first duty will be to see that these payments are finalised,

and the TIRIGIs will be told the same thing in a day or two when I see them. In all seven deaths are involved, 5 Namos and 2 Huris.

Food was brought in in vast quantities, and I had to reject a lot. These people's gardens are quite extensive, and being cleared out of virgin scrub, produce the biggest sweet potatoes I have ever seen, some weight seven or eight pounds each.

Wednesday 18th November, 1953

HAINANA to SISIBIA No. 27

Timetable

Dep. HAINANA	0635
Arr. SISIMA'A	1100 1100
Cross KEBO Bridge	1100-1220
Follow OTOMA Riv.	1355-1455
Arr. SISIBIA	1610
<u>Walking time: 8hrs 25mins.</u>	

A hard day's walk, first over rough limestone, climbing steadily along the S-western side of the Kikori, before reaching Sisima'a. We lost the trail briefly here and I was much chagrined to have to climb half way down to the Kikori, before the guide (SOJORO) said nonchalantly "Oh this isn't the way; there isn't a road here." and we had to climb back up. Eventually we got down to the river and across the awe-inspiring chasm, with a terrific grind up the other side. We crossed the SIBISIBA River pouring down the side of the cliff in a series of glorious cascades, and then on reaching the top walked steadily over slushy tracks, before striking the Otoma River. This we followed up its course for an hour, during which time it diminished from quite a respectable stream to a mere trickle. A dash through scattered swamps, and over odd ridges, and we arrived at Sisibia, where camp was made in the new garden clearings.

Though I had sent word ahead, all the locals had not assembled, so I decided to leave the census of this place till I return from Wammai'iu. Talks held with the people in their communal house, before buying what little food they had to offer. Rice issued for the morning.

Thursday 19th November, 1953

SISIBIA to WAMMAI'IU No. 28

Timetable

Dep. SISIBIA	0655
At FOGECEBO	1030-1045
At Top IWA Range	1135-1145
Arr. MABO	1400
Arr. WAMMAI'IU	1505
<u>Walking time: 6hrs. 45mins.</u>	

Const. MAUI and surplus carriers and loads were sent through to Kutubu in the morning, with a note asking for the canoes, and then the patrol moved off to Wammai'iu. A rugged day, over some of the roughest limestone in this area. Shortly after leaving camp we got a fine view of the Kikori where it swings back on its course, towards the west. A deep gorge, with the river churning along in the bottom. After climbing the end of the Iwa Range, the going got slightly better, and we passed through one or two old garden clearings, including MABO, before arriving at Wammai'iu. Here I found that everyone was in residence, so immediately sat down and did the census, while camp was being erected. Much of the population that was previously recorded here has returned to Sisibia, the reason being that in 1951, they were afraid of raids from the Kutubu people. With that fear gone, they have returned to their own area. Talks held later on, and everything reported to be flourishing.

Food sufficient for the evening was bought, though the gardens and indeed the house too are very new, so what we bought was mostly sago.

Friday 20th November, 1953.

WAMAI'IU to SISIBIA

No. 29

Timetable

Dep. WAMAI'IU	0655
Arr. MABO	0800
Arr. TOP IWA Range	0940
At. FOGEGERO	1030-1950
Arr. SISIBIA	1305

walking time: 5hrs 30mins.

Back over yesterday's track, and it did not seem nearly such an imposing task as we had expected last night. We crossed in considerably better time, though the tail-enders gragged somewhat. On arrival at SISIBIA I checked a nearly full census, and then listened to a tale of woe by one of the ex RUMU prisoners. It appears he has affiliations up the AVA River, and rehearsed an old claim for compensation. The man supposedly responsible was questioned, and though he admitted to the incident alledged, he said he had already made payment five times and was getting rather tired of it. This was checked against independant evidence and found to be correct, so the claimant was sent off with a file in the car. Later the matter of the TIRIGI/HUGU clash was discussed, and these people said they were quite ready to make the payments involved.

Once again only very little food available.

Saturday 21st November, 1953.

SISIBIA to TAGE

No. 30

Timetable

Dep. SISIBIA	0630
At NEW KAIPU	0855-0915
Arr. MORO	1375-1340
At SORO I	1415-1430
Arr. TAGE	1545

Travelling Time: 5hrs 0mins

Walking steadily all day, we stopped first at Kaipu where I conferred with the Village Constable - FAGA - on an alledged sorcery case, and straightened that out, and then picked up HIANI as a Medical Trainee for this village. Over irregular ranges, with the highest the KOBANISIA, reached at 1125. Down the other side we followed one of the HAMUA tributaries, before reaching the Hamua itself. This we followed for some time, and on crossing it for the last time met Sgt. Sae who had come across with the canoes. Discussions on recent events at the station followed, as we walked through to Moro, where I stopped to inspect progress, and listen to and settle a complaint. Through to the Soro, where the large station canoe and two small ones were waiting. Embarked, and just beat the rain in to Tage. As Mr. Wren had not returned from Fore, the patrol was stood down, while I checked over events during my absence.

END OF DIARY

SUMMARY

Index

1. NATIVE AFFAIRS.
2. ANTHROPOLOGICAL.
3. TOPOGRAPHY AND COMMUNICATIONS.
4. MEDICAL AND HEALTH.
5. AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK.
6. MAP.
7. VILLAGE OFFICIALS.
8. CENSUS AND STATISTICS.

1. NATIVE MATTERS

In the Lower TARI area, the effect of recent patrols is becoming more and more evident, and inter-clan fighting has become almost non-existent. A possible exception is the BENAKIA Valley, which has not had the same degree of contact due to its geographical position, but even here there is a marked improvement, and a more willing spirit of co-operation is becoming evident. Perhaps the best indication of the release of tension that is now apparent, is the number of natives who of their own volition are visiting other clans. The incident in which a Hoi'ia woman was stabbed is testimony of the fact that Governmental strictures on the matter of unlawful killing are being heeded. Prior to the coming of the Administration, this incident would have meant death. There is still an irresponsible element in the area as exemplified first by the Bakare flare-up at the feast at ARIBU, and secondly by the insults hurled at the patrol while moving through to Kuieri. The same group was responsible in both cases, and I do not consider these indicative of the real feelings of the people, and are relatively unimportant. Some time was spent trying to assess just what the local attitude to the death of Const. AGAU at Tari earlier this year is, and on two occasions I was told "That happened at Rumurumu and doesn't concern us as we are Kutubu people. We know that if the Government wanted to it could shoot the people who did it". Kutubu is coming more and more to be recognized as the local seat of the Government, and this attitude is being encouraged, though it was found necessary to stress the fact that Rumu as well as Kutubu are Government stations with identical policies, and officers from either station have jurisdiction over the area, and have the interests of the native at heart. Propaganda was spread to check a reported tendency to refuse assistance to Rumu patrols.

The fighting which was mentioned earlier involving the lower Tari people and the TIRIGI clan of OTOMA was investigated, and the full story is as follows. A party of Tirigis were visiting the lower Kondari Valley, when they met two men from the HUGU clan who lived at Iokorobu (this was prior to the desertion of that village). One of these men was killed and eaten on the spot - the NAMO tribe to which the Tirigis belong being cannibals until a few years ago - and the other kidnapped and taken back to Otoma, where he too was eaten. In the war that followed, the Hugu clan called on the assistance of the ARUMAS from the Pai, Maribu and Tambera areas, and in a retaliatory raid five Tirigis were killed, including two women. In the course of time, further deaths occurred, but approximately balanced each other. A truce was called when the first post-war Government patrols arrived at Kutubu, and no payments have been made since. Prior to that however, a Tambera man who had assisted in the fighting died for no apparent reason, and his relatives believed sorcery was responsible. They thereupon claimed compensation from the Hugu clan, saying the man had died as a result of the feud with the Otomas, the latter having made the spell. This the Hugus denied, claiming that had that been the case, one of them would have died, and not one of their allies. However the Arumas pressed the matter, and to obtain satisfaction stole pigs belonging to the Hugus. This started a war between the two clans, the aftermath of which has been apparent in the area till very recently, and during the course of which Iokorobu and two or three other hamlets were deserted.

The Hugas who were responsible for the original fight, now live at POGORARI in the lower Paus Valley, and they as well as the Tirigis have been instructed to pay compensation for the seven people who were killed in the first outbreak, to which both sides have agreed.

The native attitude to the patrol in the MANANDA Basin was extremely satisfactory on the whole, and a very willing spirit of co-operation was displayed as soon as the people were aware of our intentions. Since this was the initial patrol to the area, no direct sanctions were imposed, though the people were warned that further patrols would be through the area in the not too distant future, to check on the veracity of the promises given me that there would be no further fighting. Some of the older men then said that patrols would be welcome, and the sooner the better, because though they were in favour of stopping fighting, the younger men might not want to. That being the case patrols could then forbid fighting, and the younger men would have to obey.

For the most part I think this attitude was sincere, though the PARANDA/TAI'IA fighting which was restarted after I left the area might contradict it. However while this patrol was in the area, it mediated at compensation payments on two separate occasions, and I feel that this may be regarded as a gesture of confidence. On the whole, the patrol was accorded a very satisfactory welcome, and I think that provided follow-up patrols can visit the area shortly, it will not be difficult to extend our control over these people. The area further to the north-west would probably come under the same category, and I understand that as soon as staff is available, the A.D.O. Tari proposes extending his influence into the DUNA Peaks area.

The Northern NAMO area is very peaceful, and the only point I shall record here is the still firm belief in sorcery that was elicited. The Administrative regulations on the matter were expounded, and the people in general and Village Constable PAGA (Kaipa) in particular were told that from now on positive action would be taken to stamp out this belief.

2. ANTHROPOLOGICAL

The people living in the country between the Tagari River and the Karius Range all belong to the Huri tribe, and the languages, customs, way of life and agriculture are identical with those of the people on the eastern side of the river. Beyond the Karius Range, the ethnological type changes, and the generic name 'TUGUBA' is applied to the KURUSA, IALU, HURUSURU, OROKO, and KASUA tribes who live south of the Mananda Basin on the other side of the range.

Perhaps the most interesting feature observed in the Mananda Basin is the extent of the authority of the TEGE leader. His authority appears to extend considerably beyond the limits of the ceremony itself, and being the most influential indigenous leader, he is a powerful force for good or evil. He has not got a counterpart in the Lower Tari area, where the Tege ceremony is not performed, but Tega leaders exist in the Huri Basin and in the PARIBARI and GIGIRA Mountains area. Ostensibly the power of these men is limited to the Tege ceremony, but they derive their additional power from the fact that they are in a position to refuse to perform Tege for anyone who disagrees with them. Thus they can decide whether or not clans will fight or make compensation payments, even though these decisions may not affect their own clan.

A check was made on the accounts of the HARUARI custom, and it was found that previous records require amendment.*

The whole period is of short duration, lasting only a few days, the first of which is ~~occupied~~ occupied with making the great wig associated with the custom. The final stage consists of perambulating round the coun-

* Ref. Kutubu P/R No.5 of 52/53, page 6, by myself.



HARUARI INITIATES

try, and this is done on the final couple of days. There is no special leader of these initiates, and a batchelor who has just completed the 'course' normally acts as mentor. The remainder of the previous account appears correct.

Several accounts of the genesis of the people living in this area were obtained, and though in some cases apparently conflicting, they are included for their anthropological interest. Care was taken in checking them, but a young informant was used, and he made it clear that he was only relaying what he had overheard ~~what~~ from older men. The chronology of the stories was difficult to ascertain, but I include them in what is apparently their correct sequence.

The first is a widespread belief of the origins of the highland people in the Southern Highlands District. A man and a woman used to live in the country to the south of the Karius range and they had three sons. The first was OBENA, the second TUGUBA and the third HURI. When they grew up, Obena was sent into the Wage Valley, and from him are descended all the KAMUSP speaking natives, and their tribal name is still OBENA. The second son ~~XXXXX~~ TUGUBA was told to stay at home, and he is the fore-bear of the people who bear his name today. Huri went to the country between the Humphries and Karius Ranges, he is the father of the Huri tribe. When Obena and Huri left their home, they took with them all their good things - white pigs and axes, paint and shell, and that is the reason that the Tuguba people are so poor today.

The reason for the taboos placed on certain items of diet by certain clans has parallels throughout the folklore of the Territory. The story here goes that at one time there were no men or women in the world. However the animals, birds and reptiles raised up people and fostered them. When they were grown up they lived by themselves, but each new clan venerated its original foster-parents, and were not allowed to kill or eat them - thus we have the Gourah Pigeon clan, Wallaby clan, Cassowary clan, Possum clan and so on, each forbidden to eat the animal bearing its name.

THE GREAT FLOOD

'In the beginning everyone lived in the country as they do now. One day, while the women were sitting round the fire in their house, water started to come up through the fireplace. They were frightened and ran outside and told their men. The men came and saw it, and found the water pouring out of the ground like a river. They were very frightened because quickly the water joined other rivers, and they began to rise and rise, and as they rose they covered all the low ground and then the mountains too, and everyone was drowned. Quite often nowadays when women are digging in the ground they find

* I have used this name, due to the lack of any other describing the language spoken by the natives living in the area from the Wage River to Mt. Ialibu. Dialectal changes occur in this area, but the basic language is the same.

old ashes and stone axes. These belonged to the people who perished in the flood.

'When everyone was dead, the floods went down again, and one day the sun came down to the earth, and saw that it was a good place, and wondered why there weren't any people. He made a little clay figure and left it on the ground and went away. The next morning he came back and he found a man there and he said "who are you and where do you come from?" The man replied that he had always been there because it was his place, and that he has the only one. The sun said "you weren't here when I came yesterday" and the man answered that this was his place. As they were talking the sun made a model of a woman out of clay and put it on the ground. Then he went away and came back in the morning, and found a woman with the man. When he asked where she came from, the man replied that she had always been there, so the sun asked why he hadn't seen her yesterday. The man replied "she has always been here." when the sun found that they did not have a house or a garden he told them to make one, and to have children. He said "I will go away now, but later when I come back and call you must answer me."

'In time the woman had a baby, and the same day the sun came again. Four times he called "HAPANJA" (meaning "Live person's mother"), but they did not answer him. He got angry and threw the gourd he was carrying onto the ground and it broke. Then he called "HOMAPENJA" (meaning "Dead person's mother") and the woman answered. The sun then asked "why didn't you answer before?" The woman did not reply, so the sun went on "in that broken gourd was water which if you had given it to the child meant you would never have died. However you did not do as I told you, so now give the child milk from your breast, and in time you and the child will die." Then the sun went away and did not come down from the sky again.'

The theme of this story and "Rungiap and lost Immortality", recorded in the Wage Valley (Kulubu P.R No.1 of 53/54) is very similar.

THE WHITE RAIN

'The third generation of old men from the time of the flood is now alive, and the infants are the sixth generation. In the first generation after the flood it started to rain one day, though not with ordinary rain, but with white stuff that was like the ground, and fell in great lumps. It rained for seven days, and all that time the sun did not come up once, but it was like night even in the day time. While it was raining some of the people went outside their houses, but most stayed inside. On the eighth day the rain stopped and the sun came out again. The people went outside, and saw that all the ground was covered in white, and all the trees were dead and all the sweet potatoes were rotten in the ground, as if they had been cooked, because the white stuff was very hot. However the people planted more sweet potatoes in the ground with the white stuff, when it had got cool, and they grew very quickly.

'Below Mt. Pa... there is a woman who says that it will rain again as it did before when she has a baby. She also says that there is a pandanus tree nearby which grows very straight and tall without a fork in it, and which has never fruited. When it fruits, and when her baby is born, then the rain will come. When it is going to come she will tell everyone, and they must make houses with very strong roofs and walls, and on the first four days they must collect firewood, and cut and dig food, and store water, because when the rain comes they will not be able to go outside.'

3. TOPOGRAPHY AND COMMUNICATIONS

The country in the Lower Tari region has been described several times, so I will confine myself to a description of the area further west. The Tagari River runs in a deep valley from below the Wada and Nari River junctions to about the Libano junction, and even below this the valley is best described as a gorge. The walls are for the most part extremely steep, and in most places unnegotiable. In all there are three crossing places in

this stretch, the first near the Wada junction, the second below Maribu, and the third at Sisima'a. All three have steep descents to the river, and I estimate the average depth of the gorge at between 1500 and 2000 feet. On crossing the River by the TIBITIBI bridge, the first ascent brings one out onto a fairly level area at the base of Mt. TIMAKU and the UBALJE Range. In places, this has been cultivated in the past, but the former occupants have all returned to the Mananda Basin. Leaving this area, the Ubaije Range was ascended, near where the AVIA River pours over it in a breath-takingly lovely fall. This range consists of soft decomposing conglomerate, and several large landslides have bared its sides, so that they are plainly visible from some distance, and which have lead to its being called Landslide Mountain.

West of the Ubaije Range lies the AGIRABA Range, which forms the eastern boundary of the Mananda Basin. It is bounded on the north and south by the Paranda and Adjaka Ranges, and to the west by the main mass of the Karius Range. IAKO Peaks and GIGIRA and its sister peak PARIBARI are visible from all round the Basin, and so to a lesser extent are NE, KEREWANA, AMBUA and DOMA on the Humphries Range and IRU and RIMI to the north.

The Mananda Basin itself consists of a level expanse of alpine swamp, in which grows a variety of dwarf pine and several other high altitude marsh shrubs and plants. The Basin is drained solely by the WAGUBA River, which has its outlet in a gap in the Paranda Range. Due to the fact that this gap is not deep, it does little more than take off the flood water, leaving the basin floor a swamp of varying depth. There is no doubt in my mind that the whole area could be drained efficiently if it were possible to deepen the Waguba River channel, and by so doing, a lot of valuable land could be obtained, not to mention a very fine airstrip. At the moment the land is waste.

South of the Avia river, limestone becomes much more in evidence, and continues south and south-east through to Lake Kutubu. The gorge below Sisima'a where this patrol, and also Mr. Wren's last patrol crossed the Kikori is a most incredible place. The river, which further up is over 100 yds across, and full in the wet season with several feet of water in it, here passes through a chasm no more than 20 feet wide, spanned by a sapling bridge. The chasm is between 70 and 100 feet deep, but flood waters obviously fill it to within 20 feet of the top. Anyone falling into that Maelstrom would never have a chance.

The rivers draining into the Tagari also either via deep gorges or in a series of cascades down the cliff faces. In the northern Namo area the limestone is extremely rough and the rivers spend as much of their time underground as above.

Roads and Bridges

Not much need be said about the roads on the area - in fact the less said the better. Efforts are being made to get the lower Tari roads fixed up, and with the appointment of village officials through the area, there should be an improvement.

In all I heard of four tracks that lead through the Karius Range. These are:-

- (i) From KANGARU and PAIANDA (PEBE Clan), north west of TOBO. This is reported to be for two days over rough country, without food en route.
- (ii) From TOBO - one day only.
- (iii) From above TIBINA, along the ADJAKA Range - 2 days.
- (iv) The track traversed by Mr. Wren in Patrol No. 11-52/53.

The only bridge of note crossed by this patrol was that at TIBITIBI, across the Tagari. The natives have been asked to refrain from cutting bridges at random, particularly in this case, because it is an amazing structure, and not easily replaceable.

Airfields

As mentioned above, the whole of the Mananda Basin is a potential airstrip. One other site which I do not believe has been previously recorded,

is at IBARA below Tamera, and near the Benaria River. I did not have time to inspect it, but I was informed that it is largely grass, and though not of strategic importance at present, it might be worth while examining it at some future date. My informant said it was as big as the Tari strip, but that seems open to doubt.

4. MEDICAL AND HEALTH

The only observation of note made by this patrol, was the number of lepers observed in the Mananda Basin. Five definite cases were seen, and the disease is reported to be fairly common. Subsequent patrols may be able to induce some of these people to go to Moresby for treatment, but no efforts were made along that line by this patrol.

Another interesting point was the three or four ginger haired natives seen. Definitely not albinos, and no one seemed to be able to account for their peculiarity.

Health among patrol personnel was only fair, and several cases of pneumonia and low-fever were treated. The ability of these natives to produce temperatures as low as 95.6° has never ceased to puzzle me. Carriers used by the patrol were roughly equal groups of Huris, Namos, and Mubis, and all performed satisfactorily, though the Mubis could have done with an electric shock now and again.

5. AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK

The agriculture of the Mananda Basin takes the same form as that practiced in the Huri Basin and lower Tari. On one or two occasions beans were seen growing, which I was told had come from the Huri Basin. There is considerable intercourse between these two groups. For the most part, the soil in the Mananda Basin is only mediocre. The population concentration is on the hills around the basin, and the arable land available is somewhat limited. Due to the practice of making gardens on the side of hills, there is much evidence of soil erosion, and considerable areas of land which are now considered useless were seen.

The condition of stock seen - in this country that term applies almost exclusively to pigs - was good, and as is usual round here, the pigs are well and carefully looked after.

6. MAP

The attached map is a modification of the 4 miles to the inch District Map, compiled originally by Messrs. Champion and Adamson. The area between 6° 15' S and 143° 00' E is based on aerial surveys conducted by the A'asian Pet. Co. Ltd., while the Mananda Basin area is original. On existing maps Mt. Gigira has been placed further to the north-west, and I have altered it to what I estimate is closer its true position. The whole area cannot be regarded as accurate, since the main peaks on the Karius and Humphries Ranges are not fixed conclusively, and their positions differ on different editions of the District Map. Rivers in the northern Namo area have been plotted on their estimated courses. As mentioned above, due to the nature of the country, it is difficult to trace their actual course.

7. VILLAGE OFFICIALS

The lower Tari area can now be considered sufficiently advanced for the appointment of Village Constables, and one of the objects of this patrol was to select suitable natives for training in their proposed capacity

of V/C. Three natives were also selected for training as Medical Orderlies, and it is hoped to send these men, as well as some other trainees at present at Kutubu to the Iduabada N.M.T.S. in the near future. At the conclusion of their course they will be returned to their villages, to act as Village Medical Orderlies. They were selected from Paua in the lower Tari, and Kaipu and Hedinia in the Namo.

When all appointments are made, I consider the disposition of village officials in the lower Tari area should be ~~distributed~~ as follows.

Clan	Village	V/C Applicant	V/C Possibility
1. HUGU	i. PAUA) ii. HOMA) iii. PURIBA)	GOTOMA (BIAME)	-
2. HUGU	i. IANGOBI) ii. PAI) iii. KUIERI)	TARO (PAI)	-
3. ARUMA	i. HOI'IA) ii. PENDENA) iii. MARUMBA)	HEWARA (HOI'IA)	-
4. ERUMA	i. TAMBERA) ii. EGARE)	-	TABIRI, WABERE or MANGE or TAMBERA
5. ARUMA	i. MARIBU) ii. MURUAKO) iii. MAGABI)	-	GATE (MARIBU)
6. PAIARI) WABIAKO) KEI'IA)	i. BENARIA Valley	-	TAGOBE or URAI
7. IOROMA) TIRIGI)	i. BAKARE Valley	-	?

Care was taken to explain that when and if these appointments are made, they will in no way supercede existing indigenous leaders, and that young men were being chosen so that local chiefs will be able to take their places in Village Councils when they are set up.

8. CENSUS AND STATISTICS

The census carried out by this patrol was complementary to the initial census compiled earlier this year, and was not a census check, except in the northern Namo area. In the lower Tari, conducting a census is a painful affair but in time the people will realize what it is about, and stop treating it as a great joke, better avoided if possible. I am of the opinion that there are still large numbers in this area who remain unrecorded. The migrational trend that will be noticed in the Namo figures result from the fact that the initial census was compiled while most of the Sisibia people were living at Wammai'iu in fear of attacks by the Lake people. They have since returned to their own village.

No head counts were carried out in the Mananda Basin area, but I estimate that the area carries a population of somewhere in the vicinity of 2,000. A further population concentration was reported in the Mt. Gigira area.

.....
C.E.T. Terrell
Patrol Officer

LAKE KUTUBU, S.H.D. 1st December, 1953

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No.3 of 53/54

APPENDIX "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No.1260 L/Cpl. AKURU 30 days
Conduct and ability good. A good man, with intelligence, initiative and experience.

No.7259 Const. AREA 30 dys
Conduct and ability very fair. A steady man, though not outstanding. Was senior constable and did a satisfactory job.

No.8351 Const. KIKIMAU 30 days
Conduct and ability fair. Very young and not nearly as wise as he thinks himself. Is learning, and though a trial at times, did reasonably well.

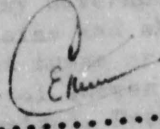
No.7797 Const. GIMI 30 days
Conduct and ability average. Is so shy that at times he appears sullen. Was one of the older hands, and has a fair grasp on the essentials. An improvement on earlier attempts.

No.7625 Const. OSABA 30 days
Conduct and ability good. A very keen youngster, and the only constable on the patrol who appeared wide awake all the time. Is gaining in experience, and one day will make a good N.C.O.

No.8352 Const. NATO 30 days
Another young member, who performed satisfactorily though not brilliantly. Has an impediment in his hearing which if not allowed for makes him seem stupid at times. Conduct and ability average.

No.7959 Const. GALIA 30 days
Conduct and ability fair. Is scarcely noticeable on patrol, but manages to do what is expected of him.

No.7961 Const. GAVURI 12 days
Was sent back from MARIJU with surplus carriers. Did well while with the patrol, but wasn't missed. Conduct and ability fair.


.....
C.E.T. Terrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

26th November, 1953.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No. 3 of 53/54

APPENDIX " B "

Report on Patrol Equipment.

This section has been added, so as to provide a report on a new type of patrol chair, which was requested by the Superintendent of Stores. Other suggestions which might be considered by Stores Purchase Board officials are included.

Furniture

The Fold-a-Bye chair sent to Kutubu for testing under patrol conditions in limestone country was used by this patrol, and found to be very satisfactory. It is sturdy - much more so than previous issues, and not affected by weather. The only damage it suffered was a few scratches and the loss of one of the rubber pads off a front leg. Its only drawback is that it is rather unwieldy to carry, and if it were possible to obtain chairs with backs that folded down onto the seats and legs, they would be an improvement. With a table that would fold into a square of about 18", and the type of chair mentioned, a pack could then be made which would be easily portable, leaving the carriers hands free, and would be an immense improvement on existing furniture, which usually is far too cumbersome to take on long patrols in this country.

Boxes

Only one-man boxes and single packs were used by this patrol, which greatly speeded up walking. A fault of the boxes which have sling attachments, is that the metal of the attachment quickly cuts through the canvas or leather slings themselves, so I suggest that strong canvas buckles should replace the present metal attachments. Another suggestion I have to make is that a box the same size as ration boxes, but opening in the front, and containing compartments and racks, would be a great help in packing and carrying medical supplies. When packed in a conventional box, the things at the bottom are awkward to get at, and unless carefully put away, are very liable to breakage, which in the case of liquids often does more damage than is warranted. Perhaps the Department of Health could standardize a sturdy pack with space for the drugs normally required by patrols.

Packs

All rations (rice, wheatmeal, sugar, salt, etc.) used by this patrol were carried in army type packs. These were quite satisfactory, and provided the contents are covered with a flap inside the cover, up to 36 lbs. of rice can be packed in them without danger of spilling. However the sling buckles frequently come apart at the stitching, and if a reinforced pack of this nature could be issued, coated with a canvas preservative, carriage of stores would be greatly facilitated. Kit-bags are not nearly so satisfactory, because though they hold more, they are harder to carry, and the material used is neither as strong nor as waterproof as the packs. Also shoulder slings are very necessary.

Buckets etc.

One of the items no longer supplied by Government Stores, and which I consider essential are canvas buckets, basins and shower baskets. Galvanised iron ones are supplied, to be sure, but these are bulky and heavy additions to patrol gear, and I have found the metal shower bucket too cumbersome and too susceptible to damage to take on patrol. Perhaps the canvas equipment could be again placed on the list of patrol gear.

.....
C.E.T. Terrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

26th November, 1953.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No.3 of 53/54

APPENDIX " C "

Report on TEGE-FAMI and -FURU Ceremonies of the HURI Tribe.*

1. INTRODUCTION

This ceremony has been reported by previous patrols (vide Tari P/R No.1 of 52/53 and Kutubu P/R 5 of 52/53), but I do not believe a full account of it has been made before. This patrol was camped at TIBINA for four days where the TEGE dances were in progress, and some time was spent attempting to analyse the various stages of the custom, and to obtain some interpretation of the ritual carried out. This latter was more difficult than anticipated, since only one man in the area is able to perform the "magic" involved, and he alone knows what the significance of each stage is. In the Tibina dance, this was LIRUARI**, and he refused politely to enlarge on the rites involved, and as much as said "you have eyes - see for yourself." All the ritual involved is a close guarded secret, and passed on from one leader to the next in such a way that the remainder of the population cannot learn what it is all about. The Master of Ceremonies himself is much respected by the rest of the group, and is probably the most influential indigenous leader within his own area. As far as I could find out there are two such leaders in the area to the west of the Kikori, one in the MANANDA Basin, and one in the GIGIRA and PARIBARI Mountains area.

2. EXTENT OF ADHERENTS AND PERIOD BETWEEN CELEBRATIONS

Most of the Huri tribe perform TEGE from time to time, but a noteworthy exception is the Lower TARI area (the BENARIA, BAKARE, IDI, PAUA and KONDARI Valleys) where though it is known, it is not practised. People from this country frequently visit areas where it is held, and attend as visitors.

There are no hard and fast rules as to when and how often a celebration will be held. A village or clan will decide that it wants a Tege Dance to take place. The clan leaders will then contact the local Tege chief, who will decide on the actual date of the dance. The period between dances organised by any particular clan varies, and may be anything between five and fifteen years. A major consideration in the fixing of a time is the number of pigs available. Thus, if due to death payments, disease or other factors there are insufficient mature pigs, Tege will not be put on. When the requisite number is available, and provided other factors are equal, the Tege chief will be contacted, and preparations got under way. Since, as mentioned earlier, there is only one man in an area who can preside at Tege, his services are at a premium, and in a favourable season, he may be called upon to ~~xxxx~~ perform several times.

3. PREPARATIONS

The first stage of the ceremony is the issuing of invitations to all whom it is desired should attend. More often than not this appears to be an open invitation, and even groups that have recently been at war with the host may be expected. It is interesting to note that though a Tege Chiefs clan may be on shooting terms with another group, the chief himself is at liberty to visit the enemy without fear of being attacked, provided the other group belongs to the Huri tribe.

The next stage is the building of the various houses required. These come under two categories:

- (i) KURUNDA - the house in which TEGE-FAMI takes place, and
- (ii) The pig-killing and roasting houses, of which there are three types, viz:

*.. TEGE is the name of the whole proceedings, and consists of TEGE-FURU (FURU = to dance, shout or sing) and TEGE-FAMI (FAMI = to strike).

**.. LIRUARI IS NOT THE man's real name. During the ceremony there is a prohibition on his using his own name and instead uses a pseudonym.

- a. LIRU'UNDA - pigs killed in these houses are given to the Tege Chief,
- b. HONTIANDA - the pigs killed in these houses are in memory of the white man whom legend has it, used to live in the area.
- c. HIRAKANJA - the 'Sun' slaughter room. Pigs killed here are in honour of the sun, which is supposed to be the people's father.

These houses are all built by the host clan with the assistance of any outsiders who are asked to help. Apparently some difference occurs from area to area in the construction of KURUNDA, though each area is governed by tradition in this matter, and the houses do not vary from time to time, so I will confine myself to a description of the house seen at Tibina. This was approximately 40' long, with an ungalied roof rising from about 4' at one end, to 20' at the other, the structure being some 14' wide. At the low end of the house there was a small ante-chamber or passage, on each side of which were stacked cords of firewood, to be used later in the fires down the length of the house. Two platforms built about 18" off the ground, ran down the whole length of the house, on each side. In between, the ground was stamped flat, to be used later as a fireplace. The roof of the house was thatched with pandanus fronds and kunai, and was walled with green branches and leaves, more or less haphazardly. A small entrance was left in the end wall below the high roof, with a little verandah, and outside this a small courtyard was fenced off with brush-wood, and a lean-to erected with a grass roof, where pigs were later roasted, and where men seeking respite from the smoke inside the house could take a breath of fresh air if it was raining.

The small houses used for the slaughter, butchering and cooking of pigs, are all similar, standing on four or six posts, with a grass thatched roof; they are generally unwalled, and are very temporary structures. Some of them have minor differences, perhaps a pandanusfrond roof, or a small partition down the middle, or a wall of fence stakes, but these depend on the whim of the builder. They are about five feet high and eight feet square, and are much the same anywhere Tege is held.

4. DANCES

The timetable adhered to is always the same, and events occur in the following order:

- 1st four days - dances from about 10am to 1pm.
- Afternoon of 4th day - preparation of KURUNDA with ceremonies inside house.
- Night of 4th day - Actual Tege-Fami ceremony, culminating with the gauntlet-run at about 4am. on the 5th day.
- 5th day - pig killing and feast.
- 6th, 7th and 8th days - dances, switch fights and general merriment.

There are three specialized dances involved in Tege-Furu, which are performed by pairs of men, and which are merely witnessed by the remainder of the population. The general dance consists of all the people who wish to partake forming in a large group (often numbering over 300 souls) who are lead up and down the dancing ground by women painted in with red and white ocre. The dance takes the form of a rythmical stamping of feet as the group trots up and down the dance ground, accompanied by a version of the Huri yodel, with half the dancers doing the roar, and half the wail, alternately. Every one that comes to the dance is decked out in their brightest feathers, with painted faces. White cockatoo feathers were most popular, and most importance is attached to decorating the wig. The women for the most part are not decorated, though usually they wear new grass skirts. All the men hold bow and arrows as they dance, with possibly a a knife or a spear in the other hand.

The three specialized dances warrant separate attention, and they are as follows:

each of the boys on the back with it.

(i) GAWE-HANGARA

Etterally this means "dance of the Red Bird of Paradise", and is performed by pairs of men or boys. These pairs must be exactly similar as regards age, height, build, marital state, prowess etc., though one pair may differ from the next. Usually a single pair is sent by each of the visiting clans. Ornaments and decoration are similar, and the whole body is painted with red ocre. Designs are superimposed on the red in white and yellow paints, with special attention being paid to the face. Round the waist a broad belt is worn, made of woven fibre, with fine patterning in black and white. Arm bands of similar make are worn above the elbows. The normal string sporan is worn below the body belt in front, while at the back a plume of 'TANKED' (Tactia Fruticosa) leaves is worn like a bustle. The head dress differs from pair to pair, in the case of boys none being used, while some men are content with their normal wigs neatly ornamented. In some cases the men wear the special HARUAHI wigs, freshly decorated and covered in red ocre. While the dance is in progress, a bow and bundle of arrows is clasped in one hand, and a single bamboo bladed arrow in the other. Each day fresh paint is put on and the ornamentation titivated.

The dance itself consists of each pair running at a sort of jog-trot, up and down the dance ground. They keep carefully in step, and every ten or twelve paces the pair stops and marks time, kicking the heels high. This goes on indefinitely while the main dance is in progress, and the dance is an intrinsic part of the Tege ceremony, never being performed separately.

(ii) KUMIA

This dance is very similar to GAWE-HANGARA, and is also performed by a similar pair of men or boys. However instead of carrying bow and arrows, drums are used, which are beaten in time to the jog-trot. Also instead of kicking up the heels during the pause, the men merely bob up and down from the knees, still beating their drums

This dance is not carried out solely at Tege, though when Tege is performed so is KUMIA. It is also used when pigs are killed at a dance initiated to heal a sick man.

(iii) PUTU

This dance is rather different, and is performed by only one man. He is dressed similarly to the dancers of the other two dances, though in addition has a great plume of lacy bamboo leaves right up his back to above his head. He holds a drum in his hands, and does not dance nearly as much as the others. His step is similar to Kumia, though more informal. I only saw this dance performed on the 4th day, and it is only used at Tege.

5. MAGIC

These rites are all performed on the afternoon of the 4th day of the ceremony, before the gauntlet was run. The significance of each of the actions described is not known, since I was unable to get an interpretation. The order in which they were carried out is, I believe, standard. Due to the confusion prevailing, I was not able to see exactly what was going on all the time, and I may have missed some details.

(i) The Tege leader gathers his aides together, and they all huddle round in a circle. In the middle of the circle are eight or nine boys from the host clan. A small hole is dug, and to the accompaniment of chants and incantations, a small Taro plant is planted and then removed.

(ii) The party then shuffles along the ground, with numerous halts, and all the time the boys in the middle are digging a drain, which is filled in again by the feet of the people coming behind. This goes on till the group reaches the enclosure of the house Kuruhda.

(iii) Just outside the house are two small grass covers, similar to bird traps. At each the group stops, and the leader climbs up a stick planted beside the structure. He takes a wand, and while chanting an incantation taps each of the boys on the back with it.

(iv) The whole group then enters Kurunda, with the boys still on their hands and knees. They remain in the house till the whole ceremony is over, and I believe they are regarded as being incarcerated for previous minor delinquencies.

(v) The helpers of the leader then line up on each side of the house, and several chants are sung.

(vi) A dead possum is tied to a stick, and one of the party takes it, entering by the low end, and carries it down the length of the house dropping it at intervals of about four feet, to the accompaniment of shouts from the men on the platforms.

(vii) Two young men wrapped in grass from head to foot are dragged through the house, one after the other, again to roars from the men.

(viii) Two old men perform a mime of making fire. They stumble, fall, and roll about as if in a frenzy, while other men hold them and rub them in the ground. They do this several times down the length of the house.

(ix) Numerous songs and chants are sung, accompanied by shuffling and stamping feet. The house has now been prepared and everyone leaves it except for the boys.

The next stage consists of the slaughter of about ten pigs, which are given outright to the leader of the ceremony. These he butchers, and distributes ~~them~~ among his helpers, and they are roasted during the evening.

Preparations for the ceremony continue during the evening after the fires have been lit. These are principally to do with the fire, and each dance is different. As they are performed on and off for about six hours, and none takes more than a few minutes to complete, they are too numerous to describe in detail. Mr. Carey has mentioned one in his report - then one like a rather weird form of "Booms-a-Daisy". I will add two more which are of interest. The first consists of one man on each side of the fire taking a stick and prancing up and down the house with the stick over the flames. As he comes to each upright in the structure, he changes hands in a very complicated manner, so much so that it had to be done several times before the Master of Ceremonies was satisfied it had been done right. The second was performed by about six men on each side of the house, to a riot of noise and smoke. Each man took a burning brand, and to the yells and shouts of everyone else stamped up and down the house, beating the brands against the posts amidst showers of sparks. This dance appeared to have more than a coincidental phallic significance, and was performed in an absolute frenzy of excitement. The whole effect was decidedly Saturnalian.

6. TAGE-FAMI

After these dances and chants had been going on some considerable time, at a signal from the Master of Ceremonies everyone quietened down, and a group of boys entered the house from the low end. By this time the fires were a glowing mass of embers, and to a roar of voices and the stamping of feet the boys raced over the fires and out of the other end of the house, in the process sending up clouds of smoke from the churned up coals. As they ran, ~~and~~ the men lined up each side of the house lashed at them with their switches, but due to the smoke and the speed at which the boys ran, not much damage was done. After the first batch had been through, others followed, sometimes in groups, sometimes singly, till all who were to run had been over the course. In the latter stages, some older men (20 to 25) walked through the house, without being beaten. This was when the fires were almost extinct.

I examined several of the boys the next day, and for the most part they had no marks of the night's trial on their feet. There were a few weals on their backs, but nothing serious. I attribute the fact that they do not get burnt to (a), the speed with which they run through the house, (b) the natural toughness of the native foot, and (c) the rapid extinction of the fires after the first few lads have been over them. As a spectacle, the ceremony is impressive; as an ordeal it is not.

It may be opportune at this stage to say that the ceremony is not an initiation in the ordinary sense of the word. As near as I could get, it appears to be a chastisement to the youths for petty sins of omission and commission, during the past years, such as disrespect, disobedience, unfilial behaviour and so on.

After the ceremony in the house is finished, the men and youths all go outside, and after some milling around, battle is joined between the older, married men, and the youngsters. Each side is armed with a thin switch in the right hand, and a bundle of switches in the left. They latter they use as a shield, while they attempt to whip their opponents with the single switch. Not everyone takes part, and many showed a wholesome respect for their hides. Many very sore backs were seen as a result of these fights. Shortly after the sun rises the 5th day, the battles stop and pig-killing and feasting starts.

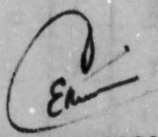
7. CONCLUSION

The total number of pigs killed varies from place to place, and at Tibina about thirty were slaughtered and distributed, special attention being paid to LIRUARI. Each group cooks its share separately, and the women folk wait around to collect their share of blood and tripe.** There are some rites performed in connection with the pig-killing, but I was not able to get details of these, and neither was their significance explained.

After the feast is over, various other dances and "games" are held, but this patrol did not witness the concluding days. I believe that most of what is of importance has been recorded above.

* The near brawl that took place at Tibina was an incident that does not usually occur.

** Women have no part at all in the actual Tege-Fami. They are only permitted to perform at the dances before and after.


.....
C.E.T. Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

26th November, 1953.

STORES TAKEN ON PATROL

ITEM	Amount Taken on Patrol	HOW ISSUED					Misc.	Amount Returned to Store
		Issues to Police	Issues to Carriers	Payment of Carriers	Purchase of Food	Hire of Canoes		
Axes, $\frac{1}{2}$	ea 9	-	-	5	-	-		4
Tomahawks	ea 18	-	-	5	10	-		3
Knives, 15"	ea 16	-	-	4	9	-		3
" 12"	ea 12	-	-	3	9	-		Nil
" 6"	ea 16	-	-	2	9	-		5
" 4"	ea 24	-	-	-	3	-		21
Mirrors, 6x4"	ea 12	-	-	-	4	-		8
" 8x6"	ea 2	-	-	-	2	-		Nil
Shell, M.O.P.	ea 10	-	-	-	6	-		4
" Cowrie	lbs 12	-	-	-	6	-		6
Salt	" 20	5	4	-	10	-		1
Beads	" 2	-	-	-	1	-		1
Necklets	ea 6	-	-	-	1	-		5
Blades, Razor	ea 50	26	24	-	-	-		Nil
Fish Lines	ea 6	-	-	-	-	-	1	5
Needles, Sail	ea 3	-	-	-	-	-	2	1
Tobacco	lbs 8	4	3	-	-	-		1
Matches	bxs 72	35	35	-	2	-		Nil
Meat	lbs 16	16	-	-	-	-		Nil
Vegemite	lbs 10	6	4	-	-	-		Nil
Tea	lbs 4	2	1	-	-	-		1
Margarine	lbs 10	5	5	-	-	-		Nil
Sugar	lbs 28	18	10	-	-	-		Nil
Wheatmeal	lbs 62	18	10	-	-	-		34
Rice	lbs 760	100	132	-	-	-		588
Batteries, 1.5v	ea 12	-	-	-	-	-	12	Nil
Pouch, V/C	ea 1	-	-	-	-	-	1	Nil
Generator, Tilly	ea 3	-	-	-	-	-	3	Nil
Mantle, Tilly	ea 6	-	-	-	-	-	6	Nil
Toilet Paper	rls 2	2	-	-	-	-		Nil
.303 Ball Ammo.	rds 250	-	-	-	-	-	100	150
.38 Ball Ammo.	rds 60	-	-	-	-	-	20	40
12gg Cartridges	ea 25	-	-	-	-	-	5	20

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS

LAKE KUTUBU

P/R No. 3 of 53/54

By: C.E.T.Terrell

To: Lower TARI, MANANDA Basin, Northern
NAMO

Blurred Document



LNA/30-2/53

Sub-District Office,
TAGH,
LAKE KUTUBI S.S.D.

04th December, 1953.

The Director of District Services,
POST OFFICE

PATROL REPORT No. 3 of 53/54

This report was designed to provide basic information on the area lying on the western side of the Tagari River, between that river and the Kurru Range and as far north as an extension west of the Tumburu/Mariba line. Also it was desired to increase Administration influence in the Tumburu/Mariba triangle. The inspection of the Nene-Gri was of a routine nature.

From all these aspects the patrol was quite satisfactory.

2. Pending an examination of the western side of the Tagari Valley from the Kurru end, it is too early to offer any recommendations as to the final boundaries that should be drawn between the Tumburu and Tari Sub-Districts in this area.

However at this stage it is known that those people who live on the southern side of the AVA River have close affiliations with the Nene people. These indeed gave way to the pressure of Nene migration and sold to that tribe much land where they are now living.

3. Mr. Terrell's specific recommendations for Village Constables will be forwarded under separate cover. I also concur with his suggested final disposition of Village Constables in the area.

The stage is rapidly being reached when these Tari people will be requested to take a share in the construction of the Nene airstrip. To that end attention is being paid to the selection of officials and census taking.

4. The incident mentioned by Mr. Terrell in the Patrol Diary of the 13th November was handled correctly in my view.

5. Could a copy of this patrol map be forwarded to the D.C., S.S.D., as well as to the A.D.O. Tari please, as well of course the normal two copies for this office.

Blurred Document

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

LAKE KUTUBA PATROL REPORT No. 3 of 53/54

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.V. TORRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....(i) Lower TARI,
(ii) MANANDA Basin,
(iii) Northern NAMP.

PATROL PERSONNEL.....OFFICERS
C.E.V. Torrell, O.I.C.

NATIVES
N.P. & N.C.C. - 8
N.N.G. - 1
Carriers - 20
Prisoners - 10

DURATION.....23rd October, 1953 to 21st November, 1953 - 30 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(i) Consolidation of Administration Influence
and Census compilation,
(ii) Extension of Administration Influence,
(iii) Census Check.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch Map Attached.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report of Police personnel,
Appendix "B" - Report on Patrol equipment,
Appendix "C" - Account of TROM-FAMI and -FAMI
customs,
Appendix "D" - Census Statistics,
Appendix "E" - Map.

.....
C.E.V. Torrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutuba, N.N.G.

23rd November, 1953.

Blurred Document

- 2 -

INTRODUCTION

The primary objective of this patrol was to ascertain the extent of the population and the nature of the country lying between the MARIEN Range to the west and the TAGARI (Nikeri) River to the east, between MARIEN in the lower TARI area, and the LANG PEAKS block. In patrol No. 11 of 52/53, Mr. Wren, A.D.O., struck the fringes of this population along the southern side of the AVA (previously and erroneously "AWARI") River, on the HAWA Range, but was not able to assess its extent. This patrol concentrated its activities in what I have called the "MARIEN Basin", an area covering possibly 80 square miles, which appears to be the main centre of population to the west of the Tagari River, south of Mts. GIGIRA and PARIBARI. This group proved to belong to what has now come to be known as the NURI tribe, with customs, social structure, and nature of life exactly similar. Though this was the first time the group has been contacted, they proved very friendly, and sincerely agreed on the undesirability of their perennial feuding, and said they would stop it. That latter point however remains to be seen.

Mr. Murdoch, A.D.O. TARI, was contacted at TAMBERA, where Mari ex-prisoner repatriates were handed over, and intra-district matters discussed. While in the lower TARI, the patrol moved right round the area and completed the initial census, with the exception of the BUSHARIA Valley and upper BAKARE - areas which will be dealt with in due course.

On recrossing the Tagari River, an initial census was compiled at NAINANA, and the villages in the HAWA tribal area not previously checked by Patrol No. 9 of 52/53 received routine visits.

The patrol on the whole was satisfactory, all direct objectives being accomplished, with no untoward incidents.

*.....Dealt with more fully under section "Topography".

DIARY

Friday 23rd October, 1953.

TAGE to No. 3 Camp.

No. 1

Timetable

Dep. TAGE
Arr. No. 1 Camp
At No. 2 Camp
Arr. No. 3 Camp

0710
0815-0830
1130-1215
1345

Travelling time: 4hrs 55mins.

Off to a good start, with the patrol aboard the new double canoe, with two smaller canoes to act as ferries up the TIRI Ck. A brief halt to organize carriers at No. 1 Camp, then steadily through to No. 3 where camp was made. One of the ex-prisoners down with toothache, which later cleared up, but otherwise a most auspicious start.

Rations issued all round.

Saturday 24th October, 1953.

No. 3 Camp to PAUA.

No. 2

Timetable

Dep. No. 3 Camp
At No. 4 Camp
At WAGE Ck.
Arr. PAUA

0835
0835-0850
1020-1045
1155

Walking time: 4hrs 30mins.

A bright morning, with everyone but a couple of the ex-prisoners keeping up well. Camp made at PUA, after a halt en route. Much of

Blurred Document

- 3 -

the afternoon devoted to a long discussion on the relative positions in the community of a Village Constable and a Councillor. A summons issued to all the locals to meet tomorrow to select a mutually acceptable candidate for Village Constable. HINI also signified his willingness to become a trainee medical orderly for his village.

Crowds of men, women and children in with food in the evening, and more than ample was purchased. There must have been 30 women and girls in camp, and they were the largest group I've seen round here.

Sunday 25th October, 1953.

PAUA

No.3

Remained in camp for the day, and during the morning discussions, GOTOHA, a Motuan speaking sub-clan leader was selected as V/C candidate, with all parties agreeing on the choice. Once again the reason for choosing a relatively unimportant man as Village Constable was explained, and all agreed that the actual head man should not receive Government pay, for his services to the community. Hini became doubtful about his prospective job, and I explained fully what would be expected of him.

Food such as same as yesterday was bought quickly and amicably.

Monday 26th October, 1953.

PAUA to PURIBA

No.4

Timetable.

Dep. PAUA	0640
Arr. RONDANI Riv.	0845
Arr. HONA	0855
Arr. PURIBA	0910

Walking time: 2hrs 30mins.

The patrol moved north-west today descending into the Rondani Valley further north than on the track leading direct to IANGOBI. We moved through the country of the ARI (mostly extinct) and KEIA clans, Hona village belonging to the first, and Puriba to the second. The combined census was taken, with better results than expected. A recent disturbance involving HINE, the ex-interpreter from Kutubu was thrashed out, and the ill-feeling that resulted appears to have largely resolved itself. The whole business appears to have started with a misunderstanding, and the argument quickly settled while I mediated.

A house burnt down just above the camp today, as a result of a carelessly left fire (the occupants were visiting the camp at the time), and a sow and her family were prematurely roasted. The still smoking remains were offered to the patrol, but when I refused to pay a tomhawk for them, they were taken away again, as the barterer said they didn't belong to him and the owner would think he had been swindled if he only got a knife for what had been a big pig, though he agreed that what was left was not worth a tomhawk. Many women and children in to the food mart, which was a good sign for an initial visit, and again plenty of food was available.

Tuesday 27th October, 1953.

PURIBA to IANGOBI

No.5

Timetable

Dep. PURIBA	0645
Arr. PONGONO Cr.	1035
Arr. PANGONO Cr.	1140-1230
At. HANUBA Cr.	1415-1425
Arr. IANGOBI	1510

Walking time: 7hrs 0mins.

The patrol climbed up steeply over the Valley wall, just above Hona, then cutting across the end of the RADIPI Range to the PONGONO Cr. Over the IAGUA Range, meeting the usual Iangobi/Paua track on the other side. A break for lunch followed at the Pangono River, and then on steadily

Blurred Document

- 4 -

to camp at IANGORI. On arrival I was told that Mr. Murdoch had arrived at Tambara, and so I decided to go straight through, instead of halting at Fai and Kueri on the way. All except a small rear guard of the Iangobis are away hunting in the Iokeroba area, and so there was no point in taking an additional census here.

Food bought here had to be oiled out with rations.

Wednesday 28th October, 1953.

IANGORI to TAMBARA

No. 6

Timetable

Dep. IANGORI	0650
At. FAI	0735-0805
At. KUIERI	0845
Arr. TAGUNI (IDI) CR.	0900
Arr. TAMBARA	1100

Walking times 3hrs 40mins.

Camp was broken in light rain, which stopped shortly after we got under weigh. At the Idi Cr. I met Cpl. KOSBAPA from the Hunt detachment, with a note from Mr. Murdoch, suggesting that I purchase food at Kueri, as very little available at Tambara. However I decided to risk it, and moved on, meeting Mr. Brown, C.P.O., who was on his way to Kueri to see what he could buy. On arrival at Tambara I met Mr. Murdoch, and discussions of local interest followed. In the afternoon a complaint was made from a small boy, that one of the Fari carriers had appropriated a shell belonging to him, and this matter was thrashed out, everyone being questioned.

With the food that Mr. Brown secured at Kueri, and what I bought locally, there was enough for both patrols, without having to expend carried rations. Some tension was present in the atmosphere.

Thursday 29th October, 1953.

TAMBARA

No. 7

The Buzuruz patrol left at 0600 hrs. on the journey back, while I remained in camp. Carriers were put on to planting a small garden with European vegetables, and the fences round the area purchased as the government camp site were cleaned up and strengthened. A drain previously started by Mr. Murdoch was continued on the unfenced side. With the carriers' barracks which were completed yesterday, there is now enough accommodation to house two patrols, all grass huts built at various times by Mr. Murdoch's patrols.

Talks were held with the people who drifted in in larger numbers than yesterday, and some of the disturbing influences were ironed out. The question of a V/C for this village was raised, but the matter was not settled conclusively*.

Once again adequate food was bought, with some women attending the sales. The compensation left by Mr. Murdoch was handed over to the small boy, and the matter was closed.

Friday 30th October, 1953.

TAMBARA to ARIBU

No. 8

Timetable.

Dep. TAMBARA	0650
Arr. EGARE	0745-0810
Arr. NAWA CR.	0830
Arr. ARIBU	0910

Walking times 1hr 50mins.

A short day through to the Bakare River, via Egare. Camp was made at Aribu on the banks of the Bakare, in a clearing adjacent to where a feast in honour of a dead headman was in progress. 18 pigs were slaughtered, dismembered, and started to steam in the ground ovens just after we arrived, and when the excitement was over, I tried to compile a census. A

* See Section "Village Officials".

Blurred Document

- 5 -

most frustrating business at best of times in this area, but when natives from five different villages are all present at the same time, and haven't the remotest idea of what a line up is, and even if they knew, couldn't keep still for five minutes anyway, the whole process drives one to the verge of distraction. Eventually recorded most of those from the lower Baniro who were present, but these must have been many absentees.

When the pigs were being cut up and distributed after being cooked, some fool of a Buiori man twanged his bow string, which in this area under similar circumstances usually means a fight. Though I was standing by at the time I did not see who it was, and in the general confusion that followed, the Buiori element decided that discretion was the better part of valour, and hot-footed it for home. A lengthy harangue followed, but as the people responsible for the incident had left, nothing more was done. The presence of the patrol probably prevented bloodshed.

Later on, when calm was again restored, adequate food was bought from local garden owners.

Saturday 31st October, 1953.

ARIBU to HANGABU (HOM'LA) No. 9

Timetable

Dep. ARIBU	0635
Top PINDERIA Range.	0730
Arr. HANGABU (PINDERIA or PINDI)	0815
Arr. HANGABU	0840

Walking time 1hr 45mins.

Camp was made after ^{walking} leaving ARIBU, in a clearing lower down the same spur on which I made camp on my last visit to this area. I had heard earlier that a woman had been attacked by a Baniro man in this area, and while camp was being made, with N.M.O. HENAI I went to have a look at her. She was cut up a bit, but not too badly and when the wounds had been cleaned and dressed she looked ~~not~~ further from Death's door. She was in a horrible mess when we found her, and it speaks volumes for the constitution of these people that she wasn't dead of gangrene or tetanus. She was given anti-Tetanus injections, and a large dose of penicillin, and will almost certainly recover. The story of the incident is rather amusing, and also indicative of the change coming over the area.

It appears that a Baniro man was hunting wild pigs in the nearby bush, but hadn't had any luck. He came to a clearing and saw the woman working in a garden with her pig nearby. To avoid going back empty-handed, he decided he would take her pig. But the woman had other ideas, and when he tried to run off with it, the woman went for him, yelling blue murder. She grabbed his wig with both hands and got his head under her arm; he couldn't shake her off though he tried biting, scratching and choking her, and was nearly getting strangled himself for his efforts. Eventually he stabbed her with his home dagger, (this was the major wound) but it wasn't till her own folk arrived that she let him go. Previously the man would have got short shift, but on this occasion he was told to go away, as they did not want to kill him, and to pay a pig as compensation. The man went, uttering imprecations and refusing to think of compensation. I then sent word that if he didn't pay, he would find himself in still less comfortable circumstances.

I compiled the census in the afternoon, and a mutually acceptable V/C Candidate - HENARA - was chosen. A few women in with food, but our requirements were fully met.

Sunday 1st November, 1953

HANGABU to PAI No. 10

Timetable

Dep. HANGABU	0700
Cross IDI Cl.	0725
Arr. PAI	0750

Walking time 50mins.

Blurred Document

- 6 -

Across the Idi Valley, to camp at Fai, and when the mist lifted, Hingbu was visible at a bearing of 11.5°. The previously uncounted people who came in to camp were recorded, but many of them had left the day before to go hunting. The few Kueria who turned up were also recorded. TARO was selected from this village as V/C candidate, and talks on this matter and on other subjects followed later in the day. An account of fighting across the Tagari River was received which will be looked into when we get there.

As supplies of big trade were getting low, I decided to concentrate on buying in small lots. This proved a new and not very popular departure, and rice had to be issued for the morning meal.

Monday 2nd November, 1953.

FAI to KUIERI

No.11

Timetable

Dep. FAI
Arr. KUIERI

0705
0740
Walking time 35mins.

Moving down the Idi Valley, the patrol was proceeded by two idiots who yodelled and shouted and made derisive gestures. What they were about was not quite clear, and I took no action. I heard rumours that everyone was preparing to flee for some reason - probably guilty consciences - and as told a few women who were ginning haines near the camp site that if they did, we should be obliged to help ourselves. However several groups drifted in during the day, and they were censured as they arrived. Later everyone who came into camp was given a thorough dressing down for the recent aggravating incidents they have been responsible for, and most of them had the grace to look sheepish.

Adequate food was bought, mostly in small lots, and several women were present at the food buying. HENARA from Hoi'ia joined the patrol here, to start his training courses.

Tuesday 3rd November, 1953.

KUIERI to MARIBU

No.12

Timetable

Dep. KUIERI
Arr. HUNUANG
Arr. MARIBU

0845
0755
0500
Walking time: 1hr 45mins

We climbed out of the Idi Valley proper, and onto the HUNUANG Range, moving through alternating scrub and old gardens to Maribu. We were sent out to the three villages in this group - HUNUANG, MARIBU and MAGARI - to come in for the census, but the result was disappointing. The camp site commands a fine view of the whole lower Tari area, and I spent some time checking mapping information, and revising previous sketches.

The question of the old fighting with the OTORA River Range was gone into, and thought the Maribus were involved, the originators of the fighting were the HUGU Clan of POGORARI in the Lower Para Valley, whom the AMUMA clan only acted as helpers.*

Talks on the fighting across the River followed, and these people say virtuously it is nothing to do with them. An ox-carrier was given an axe due to him, but ANDARE, the second man who was owed an axe has migrated to the Huri Basin. A pig was bought, along with adequate food for our requirements. Preparations were made in the evening for sending a line of carriers I no longer need back to the station in the morning.

*.....For original reference to this fighting, see Kutubu P/R No.11 of 52/53, pp 48, by Mr. Wren, A.D.O.

Blurred Document

- 7 -

Wednesday 4th November, 1953

MARIBU to HIRADIMA

No.13

Timetable

Dep. MARIBU	0640
Arr. MAGABI	0655
Cross TAGARI by TIBITIBI Bridge	0645-1215
Top PINDIJE Range	1005-1320
Arr. HIRADIMA Lake	1430
Arr. " Camp	1500

Walking time: thru 35mins.

Slightly delayed getting the Rutuba party on the way, the patrol then moved a little further down the Numba Range, before starting a steep descent to the Tagari just beyond Magabi. On arrival at the Tibitibi Bridge it was found to be a new structure, but not particularly strong and some time was spent reinforcing it. There was a feast in progress just above here yesterday, with representatives from both sides of the river present, and some fears were held that the group from over the river might cut the bridge after hearing of the patrol's presence. I had sent two police down yesterday to check on the bridge, but they had been stopped by local natives and told this story, and they wisely returned. As a result of this word of the patrol's presence probably did not get through. The bridge itself is a marvel of native engineering, being all of 60 yards across. Had the it been cut, it would have meant a long detour for us. The river here has a bed of between 50 and 100 yards across, between limestone walls and pour along at 12 or 14 knots. In the middle the bridge is only a few feet above water level when being crossed, and apparently often gets washed away. After a certain amount of jibbing, the whole patrol crossed safely with the loss of nothing more serious than someone's tooth pipe. A sharp climb followed up the other wall of the gorge, to the top of the Pindiye range, and then across unexpectedly flat country to camp at Hiramima. This was on the creek of the same name which flows into Hiramima Lake - a stretch of water, pear shaped, about 50 yards by 30, which appeared decidedly unhealthy, and was reported to swarm with mosquitoes. Its only oddity was that I was told it didn't have an exit. This did not seem worth checking.

Rations issued to all personnel.

Thursday 5th November, 1953

HIRADIMA to TAGIRIATENDA

No.14

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0655
Arr. AGGTANE CR.	0730
Arr. PADITE Clearings	1005-1025
Arr. AVIA Falls	1100-1110
Arr. TAGIRIATENDA	1230

Walking time: thru 50mins.

Crossing the Hiramima Cr. once more, the patrol moved slightly north of west over flattish country interspersed with old garden, skirting the base of Mt. TIMAJU (Landslide Mtn.). We were delayed considerably having to cut through tangled undergrowth covering the track, particularly near old gardens. This area was fairly heavily populated at one time, but due to fighting and so on, the population has moved back into the Namanda Basin.

Shortly after resting in the Padite clearings we came to the Avia River, just below where it plunges over a 200' cliff in a spectacular waterfall. The top of the cliff has been cut away by a series of landslides, and the river bed consists of masses of huge rocks and conglomerate boulders. After a halt to take some photographs, the patrol climbed up the AGIRARA range, for the most part over an old landslide. Further round on this and the UBAIJE ranges are the landslides that earned for this block its name. A halt was called at the top, where we got our bearings from the glorious panorama laid out below us, looking back over the country we have crossed. The patrol then moved on through a thin belt of scrub, before coming out at the extreme eastern end of the Namanda Basin. To begin with, the first local natives we saw were nervous of the patrol, but while camp was being made more than 50 men came in to watch proceedings. Once over their initial sty-

Blurred Document

- 3 -

ness they were very friendly, and when later I spoke to them about fighting and our attitude towards it, the talk was very well received. The two clans living in this area are the URA and NAI'IA, the village of the latter being NARUMA.

Plenty of food was bought for small trade though no women appeared. Two were digging potatoes nearby when we arrived, and though not unduly perturbed, they wandered off later.

Friday 6th November, 1953.

TAGIRUATENDA to TAGORE

No.15

Timetable

Dep. TAGIRUATENDA	0700
Arr. TUNIPARI CL.	0730
Arr. TAGORE	0820
<u>Walking time: 1hr 20mins</u>	

A little further to the NW, over patches of bog, scrub, gardens and clearings. Near houses the track was well cleared, but for the most part it was the typical Tard track. Camp was made near a small group of houses, belonging to the people who were responsible for the death of KIRAGARI's father, the former being a man from Benaria and Maribu who when he heard of the patrol was crossing to the Muzanda area asked if he could accompany it to get compensation for this death. The killing was the result of marriage payment being given to only one group of the ~~family~~ relatives and one of those who considered themselves slighted shot the groom shortly afterwards. The matter was thrashed out when camp had been erected, and those responsible agreed to pay compensation. In the afternoon three large pigs, ten strings of cowrie shell, and nine small pigs were assembled, and handed over to KIRAGARI. Both sides professed themselves satisfied and the incident is now closed. Kiragari presented me with one of his pigs as a token of esteem, so I gave him an M.G.P. shell on the same basis. He also gave half a pig to the Huri carriers.

I gave a rifle demonstration to the assembled men after the business had been finalised, and all were suitably impressed. They said that though they had heard of our rifles they didn't believe them till now, and had thought them pieces of wood. I was told while I was at Tagore that the fighting between this group and the TAI'IA further north had just finished, and the initial pig killing was in progress, so beyond saying a few words on the matter took no further action. Apparently the locals are in the habit of leaving their villages in the morning, racing through to the battle-ground, doing battle in the middle of the day, and then going home to bed. Shades of the Crusades.

An amusing incident occurred during food buying in the evening. One old man put the salt he had asked for down on top of the food he had sold, and refused to accept it. Asked why, he said it wasn't the same as Huri salt, so I gave him half a tea spoonfull to try. He put it all in his mouth at once, and was very nearly sick on the spot. Great mirth, and no more doubters. A great deal of food was quickly bought, mostly in small lots. A very well fed camp.

Saturday 7th November, 1953.

TAGORE to NUSU

No.16

Timetable

Dep. TAGORE	0610
At PARANDA	1045-1115
Arr. WAGUBA Riv.	1210
Arr. KIRU(IHONI) Clan	1230
<u>Walking time: 2hrs 50mins.</u>	

The patrol moved in a semicircle along the PARANDA Range, to camp just over the WAGUBA River, in country belonging to the IHONI Clan. The Waguba is the only stream leading directly out of the Muzanda Basin, its course running through a break in the Paranda Range. About ten yards

Blurred Document

wide, we crossed it by a well made hump-back bridge, then moving through many gardens and scattered houses, to make camp at KUMU. Once again the people were very shy, but by dint of much shouting, they started to drift in, and by the afternoon 50 or 70 men were in camp. The fighting reported between this group and the LENE people of IAPPA mentioned by Mr. Green was investigated, and these people claim that the other side killed one of their fight leaders, but no other death occurred. However, they (the ILENIS) had burnt LENE houses and destroyed gardens. As both sides would be represented at the TIBINA ceremony to be held at TIBINA, which I had heard about, I told them the matter would be discussed there. General talks followed, with considerable interest displayed. Self a great attraction, and as is usual in this country a swarm of onlookers settled round my tent watching every move.

Food in great abundance was produced, so much in fact that a three-quarter filled mail bag had to be refused. A pig was bought after a certain amount of haggling. These people value their food and stock rather higher than do the people in the Kuri Basin. The pig was duly shot much to the awe of the populace. Weekly issues distributed to all personnel.

Sunday 8th November, 1953.

KUMU to TIBINA

No. 17

Timetable

Dep. KUMU	0710
Cross WABUDA Riv.	0730-0820
Arr. TIBINA	0920

Walking time 1hr 35mins.

The patrol moved SSW to begin with, again coming to the Wabuda Riv., which this time was not bridged, and as it was rather too deep to ford, we spent some time building a temporary bridge. There are very few large trees once one leaves the scrub, and we had to use saplings. On the other side of the river we moved more or less due south, crossing the BAKUA Marsh, which covers the whole of the floor of the Mananda Basin. It is dead level for miles, with patches of swamp grass, and miniature pine groves, all growing in the from ankle to knee deep swamp. On reaching the other side of the swamp, we paused for a while to let locals get ahead of us with word of our arrival, and then moved on to Tibina, to make camp the other side of the ground which had been cleared for the dancing. This village is on the bases of the ADJANA Range, which forms the southern rim of the Basin, and only a few feet above the swamp.

During the morning, while camp was being built, several hundred natives from round about came in for the second day of dancing, and were a very impressive sight as they thundered past the camp. Later on it was a hard job to keep them interested in what they had come for, and not to swarm round the camp. The dancing did not last very long, and when it was over I spoke to as many of the people as I could keep together.

In the afternoon I closeted myself with LIKIANI, the Master of Ceremonies for the whole TIBE ceremony, and started gathering information about it. He is an extremely influential gentleman, and the only person in this area who can institute a Toge dance.

Later on I bought food which was to last for four days. I was told politely but firmly that as these people were the hosts in this dance, they would not have time later on to spare in bringing in food. Several women also produced their bundles of greens and so on and were told that we heartily encouraged this practice. Each was given a small present.

Monday 9th to Wednesday 11th November, 1953

TIBINA

No. 18-20

The patrol remained three days at Tibina, gathering information on the Toge ceremony and dances, spreading Governmental propaganda, and generally establishing sound and friendly relations with these extremely hospitable and friendly people. Dancing took place regularly and the culmination of the ceremony occurred on Tuesday night. Though no co-operative, the

Blurred Document

- 10 -

excitableness of these people, and their complete lack of inhibitions was demonstrated on Wednesday evening. At the conclusion of the actual Tegu-Peni (a more detailed description of the whole ceremony appears in Appendix "C" of this report), a battle is held between the single and married men of the community, each side being armed with thin and resilient switches, and to begin with the young men had success massacred their elders, but just as dawn was breaking, the latter made a comeback and routed the youngsters. At this stage I had gone to bed, having been up all night, when I was told that the young men had got nasty over their defeat and had fired some arrows, fortunately without hitting anyone. I stirred out, but the youngsters had taken to their heels, and so merely demonstrated my disapproval to those who remained. Things quietened down quickly, and everyone was back by mid day, when the pigs were slaughtered and started to roast. They were all most apologetic about the incident, and said they got carried away. Later the same day a meeting was held and the Government's attitude towards fighting again declaimed, and everyone agreed whole heartedly that it would be a good thing to give it up. Then one after the other several of the clan leaders got up and said that they would not fight anymore, and all appeared absolutely sincere. LUMASI was given a special talk about our aims, and he said he fully agreed, and promised to do what he could to help. He is an outstanding native, with great natural dignity and much authority in this area. Future patrols would do well to cultivate him further. Before I left, I gave him a small present as a gesture of good-will. I considered it a compliment when he called me "MANNI" (elder brother), but I emphasized that the Governmental role was more paternal than fraternal.

Thursday 12th November, 1953.

TIBINA to TUDO

No. 21

Itinerary

Dep. TIBINA	0656
Cross WAGUBA Riv.	0735
Halt MABOBA	0810-0830
Arr. TUDO (TUBANI clan)	0855

Walking time: 1hr 40mins

The patrol moved up onto the ADJAKA range again, at the extreme South-western corner of the basin, and I was told that the country further west belongs to the TUBANI people, a generic name applied to all who don't happen to be Huris. On arrival at camp about 40 locals came in and looked on, but later for some reason they all left again and did not return. I spent some time pacifying and extremely aged gentlemen, apparently in an advanced state of senility, who seemed to be convinced I was there to take him across the Styx. It may have been his influence that sent the rest of the men off, or merely their desire to return to the dancing at TIBINA. I spent some time gathering topographical information, and also on the whereabouts of roads leading across the KARIBU Range.

A little food bought from natives from lower down the range who came with us. Had to be augmented with rations.

Friday 13th November, 1953.

TUDO to KAVANI

No. 22

Itinerary

Dep. TUDO	0900
Arr. WAGUBA Riv.	0705
Halt MUBWA	0740-0830
" TIBANI	1120-1140
Arr. AVIA CL.	1145
Arr. " " (End Time)	1305
Arr. KAVANI	1315

Walking time: 4hrs 15mins.

To begin with the patrol moved south, then south east down the AVIA Valley. A halt was made at MUBWA to try and contact natives responsible for another small feud that had been reported to me, and a pig was handed

Blurred Document

- 11 -

over to the man who had claimed it. This was not a full payment, but the remainder of the people responsible were reported to be away hunting. A small group of them were come upon at TIDABE, but they fled on the patrol's arrival.

The country after leaving the cleared garden area on the edge of the Namanda Basin, consists of heavy mass forest, and a series of irregular ridges, before coming to old and deserted clearings at the very head of the AVIA River. Just after leaving Tidabe, we crossed the AVIA, immediately striking into limestone ridges - for the first time since leaving the Kihori. The AVIA valley is not clearly defined, and indeed the river moves underground for part of its course, a fact that I realized when we came to the AVIA the second time, apparently on the wrong side. At this spot it was bridged, and on crossing we came almost immediately to garden ground belonging to the ABO Clan, and a little further on made camp.

During the afternoon it was reported to me that a local woman had been collected by one of the patrol personnel, and the woman and her husband duly appeared. A line up was held, and TARO, the PAI V/C Candidate accused. Intensive questioning followed, and though I was reasonably sure that Taro was responsible, there was insufficient evidence to charge him. The woman was given compensation (no actual assault had occurred), and Taro was given a concentrated lecture.

Talks held with the people in the evening, after I had bought enough food for our needs. I was told that the IMNI people were coming here to arrange the payments to be made with the LEBE who are now living near this area, so I decided to remain in camp here tomorrow.

Saturday 14th November, 1953.

KAWANI

No.23

The stay at Kawani proved abortive, as I heard during the morning that far from wishing to make compensation payments, the LEBE clan had mostly run away on learning that the patrol was waiting to mediate in the matter. In addition to this I heard that the IMNI people had gone to help their neighbours, who had restarted the fight with the TAI'IA group. Apparently the feast signifying the end of the fighting was in progress, when a Tai'ia man who had previously been wounded, died. The battle started up again in earnest, both sides calling in their allies. So much for the assurance I had received that that particular group had no further desire to fight. I considered taking action to stop the fighting, but decided against it since this is the first patrol to the area, and no direct sanctions had been promulgated. As a result of this I learned in the afternoon from a very polite message, that the Imni were otherwise engaged, and would not be able to come through to Kawani for a few days.

The pigs were brought in for ^{sale} only one of which I bought, as my supply of tawahaka was very low. Crowds of women and girls appeared at the food buying, which rather surprised me, considering yesterday's incident. Moreover all were in high fettle, and not in the least shy. The fact that both days they all received small gifts may have had something to do with this. Our food requirements were fully met.

A rumour was received here that there is another patrol in the Namanda Basin. One occasion when Bush Telegraph appears to have gone haywire.

Sunday 16th November, 1953.

KAWANI to PARIANE

No.24

Itinerary.

Dep. KAWANI	0643
ARR. HUNGUNI'IA (IAPPA Clearings of LEBE Clan)	0945-1000
At HARIKANDA (TOBE Clan)	1150-1235
Arr. PARIANE	1330
	Walking time 5hrs 40mins.

After following the AVIA for a while, we left it were it started to swing further away to the north east, and cut across a series of ridges, all forming part of the KAWA Range. We reached the old clearings of the LEBE

Blurred Document

- 12 -

Clen at 0630, and these continued with breaks to HUNGERI'IA, where a halt was called. Mr. Wren camped at this village on his way back from across the KARIUS Range, this being the first of the population in this area that he struck. In comparison with the Mananda Basin, it is very light indeed, and by no means an indication of that further north. Camp was made at PARIANE, shortly after crossing out of the Avia watershed and into the Ava (Arava) drainage area. This stream is a disconcerting one, as lower down it is fairly large. However it has a very short course, swelling rapidly with numerous largish tributaries, draining off Mts. HANA and TIMANU. The Avia is a much larger river, though it does not carry the same volume of water.

Pariane is sited more or less opposite the N-western end of TIMANU and commands a fine view of the USALJE and ASTRAIA Ranges, with their spectacular landslides and waterfalls. Also visible are the large mountains on the Haphria Range. The TOME people occupy this area, and it was a great relief to be told that they are not fighting anyone, and haven't any unpaid compensation to claim. They appear to act as middlemen in the HAU-to-HUNI trade route, and say that though they never go anywhere they often have visitors. In point of fact there were two men from the Hano-Uri in the village when I arrived, but they were advance guards of the party I had sent to Hainana with extra rations before I left Kutuba.

Most of the people from this area were reported to be still away at Tibina, attending the dance, so not much food was bought. Some people arrived in in the late evening, reporting that they had just left the dance which was now over.

Monday 16th November, 1953.

PARIANE to KIKORI Camp.

No. 25

Timetable

Dep. PARIANE	0600
Arr. MOGABAI CR.	0650
At. HEDHA CR.	1030-1035
At. TIGHARI CR.	1200-1230
Arr. Camp	1250

Walking times 5hrs 20mins

Still walking down the Ava Valley, the patrol passed through a belt of bush, then into the TAMBENHA clearings of the TOME clan. These we left at 0715, and walked steadily through bush over noticeably rougher limestone, crossing three large streams and several small ones, all flowing into the Ava. Camp was made in Mr. Wren's old camp site, and the afternoon was devoted to clearing a lookout over the Kikori, which flows in an open bed 100 feet or so below the camp. On the other side of the river are sheer cliff faces, climbing away to the HANANU Range. We were just about opposite where the Maruba River flows through a narrow crack to join the Kikori.

The two Namos were sent on to Hainana to alert the people there. Full rations issued.

Tuesday 17th November, 1953.

KIKORI Camp to HAINANA

No. 26

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0645
Arr. HAINANA	0645

Walking times 5hrs 0mins.

A short day down the Kikori, over a badly overgrown track, where several windfalls had to be cut through. On arrival the census was compiled, with rather better results than expected. This group is a breakaway, and has not been in existence very long. The OTOM/PAL fighting was discussed, and I was told that the originators of the fighting in this tribe are the TIRIGI clan now living at SISIBIA. The V/C candidates for Pasa and Pal were spoken to about the matter, and told that when they return to their villages, their first duty will be to see that these payments are finalised,

Blurred Document

- 12 -

Clen at 0630, and these continued with breaks to HENHUBI'IA, where a halt was called. Mr. Wren camped at this village on his way back from across the KARIUS Range, this being the first of the population in this area that he struck. In comparison with the Namanda Basin, it is very light indeed, and by no means an indication of that further north. Camp was made at PARIANE, shortly after crossing out of the Avia watershed and into the Ava (Avora) drainage area. This stream is a disconcerting one, as lower down it is fairly large. However it has a very short course, swelling rapidly with numerous largish tributaries, draining off Mts. HAWA and TIMAKU. The Avia is a much larger river, though it does not carry the same volume of water.

Pariane is sited more or less opposite the N-western end of TIMAKU and commands a fine view of the UCAIJE and AGIRADA Ranges, with their spectacular landslides and waterfalls. Also visible are the large mountains on the Huphris Range. The TOBE people occupy this area, and it was a great relief knowing that they are not fighting anyone, and haven't any unpaid compensation to claim. They appear to act as middlemen in the HAWA-to-HURI trade route, and say that though they never go anywhere they often have visitors. In point of fact there were two men from the Nam-Uri in the village when I arrived, but they were advance guards of the party I had sent to Hainana with extra rations before I left Kutaba.

Most of the people from this area were reported to be still away at Tibina, attending the dance, so not much food was bought. Some people arrived in in the late evening, reporting that they had just left the dance which was now over.

Monday 16th November, 1953.

PARIANE to KIKORI Camp.

No. 25

Timetable

Dep. PARIANE	0630
ARR. MOGABAI Cr.	0850
At. HENHUBA Cr.	1020-1035
At. TIBINARI Cr.	1200-1230
ARR. Camp	1300

Walking time: thru 25mins

Still walking down the Ava Valley, the patrol passed through a belt of bush, then into the TAMHUBA clearings of the TOBE Clan. There we left at 0715, and walked steadily through bush over noticeably rougher limestone, crossing three large streams and several small ones, all flowing into the Ava. Camp was made in Mr. Wren's old camp site, and the afternoon was devoted to clearing a lookout over the Kikori, which flows in an open bed 100 feet or so below the camp. On the other side of the river are sheer cliff faces, climbing away to the HANANU Range. We were just about opposite where the Haraba River flows through a narrow crack to join the Kikori.

The two Namos were sent on to Hainana to alert the people there. Full rations issued.

Tuesday 17th November, 1953.

KIKORI Camp to HAINANA

No. 26

Timetable

Dep. Camp	0645
ARR. HAINANA	0845

Walking time: thru 20mins.

A short day down the Kikori, over a badly overgrown track, where several windfalls had to be cut through. On arrival the census was compiled, with rather better results than expected. This group is a breakaway, and has not been in existence very long. The OTOMA/PAI fighting was discussed, and I was told that the originators of the fighting in this tribe are the TIKIGI clan now living at SINIBIA. The V/C candidates for Pann and Pai were spoken to about the matter, and told that when they return to their villages, their first duty will be to see that these payments are finalised.

Blurred Document

- 13 -

and the VIRIGIA will be told the same thing in a day or two when I see them. In all seven deaths are involved, 5 NAWA and 2 HAWA.

Food was brought in in vast quantities, and I had to reject a lot. These peoples gardens are quite extensive, and being cleared out of virgin scrub, produce the biggest sweet potatoes I have ever seen, some weight seven or eight pounds each.

Wednesday 10th November, 1953

HAINANA to SISIBIA

No. 27

Timetable

Dep. HAINANA	0635
Arr. SISIMA'A	0835-0850 1100
Cross KERO Bridge	1130-1230
Follow OTOMA Riv.	1355-1455
Arr. SISIBIA	1610

Walking time: 3hrs 25mins.

A hard day's walk, first over rough limestone, climbing steadily along the S-western side of the Kikori, before reaching Sisima'a. We lost the trail briefly here and I was much chagrined to have to climb half way down to the Kikori, before the guide (208000) said melanchantly "Oh this isn't the way; there isn't a road here." and we had to climb back up. Eventually we got down to the river and across the awe-inspiring chasm, with a terrific grind up the other side. We crossed the SISIBIA River peering down the side of the cliff in a series of glorious encoders, and then on reaching the top walked steadily over slushy tracks, before striking the Otoma River. This we followed up its course for an hour, during which time it diminished from quite a respectable stream to a mere trickle. A dash through scattered swamps, and over odd ridges, and we arrived at Sisibia, where camp was made in the new garden clearings.

Though I had sent word ahead, all the locals had not assembled, so I decided to leave the census of this place till I return from Wama'i'u. Talks held with the people in their communal house, before buying what little food they had to offer. Rice issued for the morning.

Thursday 10th November, 1953

SISIBIA to WAMA'I'U

No. 28

Timetable

Dep. SISIBIA	0635
At FOGGIBO	1030-1045
At Top IWA Bango	1135-1145
Arr. MADO	1450
Arr. WAMA'I'U	1505

Walking time: 3hrs. 40mins.

Const. MAUI and surplus carriers and loads were sent through to Kutuba in the morning, with a note asking for the canoes, and then the patrol moved off to Wama'i'u. A rugged day, over some of the roughest limestone in this area. Shortly after leaving camp we got a fine view of the Kikori where it swings back on its course, towards the west. A deep gorge, with the river churning along in the bottom. After climbing the end of the Iwa Bango, the going got slightly better, and we passed through one or two old garden clearings, including MADO, before arriving at Wama'i'u. Here I found that everyone was in residence, so immediately set down and did the census, while camp was being erected. Much of the population that was previously recorded here has returned to Sisibia, the reason being that in 1951, they were afraid of raids from the Kutuba people. With that fear gone, they have returned to their own area. Talks held later on, and everything reported to be flourishing.

Food sufficient for the evening was bought, though the gardens and indeed the houses too are very new, so what we bought was mostly soap.

Blurred Document

- 14 -

Friday 20th November, 1952.

WAMAI'IU to SISIBIA

No. 29

Timetable

Dep. WAMAI'IU	0635
Arr. MAHO	0800
Arr. TOP IWA Range	0940
At. FORGETTED	1030-1030
Arr. SISIBIA	1325

Walking Times 3hrs 30mins.

Back over yesterday's track, and it did not seem nearly such an imposing task as we had expected last night. We crossed in considerably better time, though the tail-enders dragged somewhat. On arrival at SISIBIA I checked a nearly full census, and then listened to a tale of woe by one of the ex HUNU prisoners. It appears he has affiliations up the AVA River, and relished an old claim for compensation. The man supposedly responsible was questioned, and though he admitted to the incident alleged, he said he had already made payment five times and was getting rather tired of it. This was checked against independent evidence and found to be correct, so the claimant was sent off with a file in the car. Later the matter of the TIRIGI/HUNU clash was discussed, and these people said they were quite ready to make the payments involved.

Once again only very little food available.

Saturday 21st November, 1952.

SISIBIA to TAGI

No. 30

Timetable

Dep. SISIBIA	0630
At NEW WAIPU	0835-0915
Arr. MOBI	1315-1340
At SORO Riv.	1415-1430
Arr. TAGI	1545

Travelling Times 3hrs 4mins

Walking steadily all day, we stopped first at Enipa where I conferred with the Village Constable - PAGA - on an alleged sercery case, and straightened that out, and then picked up MIANI as a medical trainee for this village. Over irregular ranges, with the highest the KOBARISIA, reached at 1125. Down the other side we followed one of the HANUA tributaries, before reaching the HANUA itself. This we followed for some time, and on crossing it for the last time met Sgt. Sako who had come across with the canoes. Discussions on recent events at the station followed, as we walked through to Mero, where I stopped to inspect progress, and listen to and settle a complaint. Through to the Sero, where the large station canoe and two small ones were waiting. Embarked, and just beat the rain in to Tage. As Mr. Wren had not returned from Fero, the patrol was stood down, while I checked over events during my absence.

END OF DIARY

Blurred Document

- 15 -

SUMMARY

Index

1. NATIVE AFFAIRS.
2. ANTHROPOLOGICAL.
3. TOPOGRAPHY AND COMMUNICATIONS.
4. MEDICAL AND HEALTH.
5. AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK.
6. MAP.
7. VILLAGE OFFICIALS.
8. CENSUS AND STATISTICS.

1. NATIVE MATTERS

In the Lower TARI area, the effect of recent patrols is becoming more and more evident, and inter-tribe fighting has become almost non-existent. A possible exception is the BENARIA Valley, which has not had the same degree of contact due to its geographical position, but even here there is a marked improvement, and a more willing spirit of co-operation is becoming evident. Perhaps the best indication of the progress of contact that is now apparent, is the number of natives who of their own volition are visiting other tribes. The incident in which a Dei'in woman was stabbed is testimony of the fact that Governmental strictures on the matter of unlawful killing are being heeded. Prior to the coming of the Administration, this incident would have meant death. There is still an irresponsible element in the area as exemplified first by the Bakare flare-up at the feast at ARIBO, and secondly by the insults hurled at the patrol while moving through to Kuri. The same group was responsible in both cases, and I do not consider these indicative of the real feelings of the people, and are relatively unimportant. Some time was spent trying to assess just what the local attitude to the death of Const. AGAU at Tari earlier this year is, and on two occasions I was told "That happened at Kusurusa and doesn't concern us as we are Kutubu people. We know that if the Government wanted to it could shoot the people who did it". Kutubu is coming more and more to be recognized as the local seat of the Government, and this attitude is being encouraged, though it was found necessary to stress the fact that Kusa as well as Kutubu are Government stations with identical policies, and officers from either station have jurisdiction over the area, and have the interests of the natives at heart. Propaganda was spread to check a reported tendency to refuse assistance to Kusa patrols.

The fighting which was mentioned earlier involving the Lower Turi people and the TIRIGI clan of OTOMA was investigated, and the full story is as follows. A party of Tirigis were visiting the lower Monderi Valley, when they met two men from the HUGU clan who lived at Iokerebu (this was prior to the desertion of that village). One of these men was killed and eaten on the spot - the HUGU tribe to which the Tirigis belong being cannibals until a few years ago - and the other kidnaped and taken back to Otoma, where he too was eaten. In the war that followed, the Hugu clan called on the assistance of the ARIBO from the Pai, Bariba and Tashera areas, and in a retaliatory raid five Tirigis were killed, including two women. In the course of time, further deaths occurred, but approximately balanced each other. A truce was called when the first post-war Government patrols arrived at Kutubu, and no payments have been made since. Prior to that however, a Tashera man who had assisted in the fighting died for no apparent reason, and his relatives believed sorcery was responsible. They thereupon claimed compensation from the Hugu clan, saying the man had died as a result of the feud with the Otomas, the latter having made the spell. This the Hugs denied, claiming that had that been the case, one of them would have died, and not one of their allies. However the Arimas pressed the matter, and to obtain satisfaction stole pigs belonging to the Hugs. This started a war between the two clans, the aftermath of which has been apparent in the area till very recently, and during the course of which Iokerebu and two or three other hamlets were deserted.

Blurred Document

- 18 -

The fugues who were responsible for the original fight, now live at BOORARI in the lower Buna Valley, and they as well as the Tirigie have been instructed to pay compensation for the seven people who were killed in the first outbreak, to which both sides have agreed.

The native attitude to the patrol in the BANANDA Basin was extremely satisfactory on the whole, and a very willing spirit of co-operation was displayed as soon as the people were aware of our intentions. Since this was the initial patrol to the area, no direct sanctions were imposed, though the people were warned that further patrols would be through the area in the not too distant future, to check on the veracity of the promises given so that there would be no further fighting. Some of the older men then said that patrols would be welcome, and the sooner the better, because though they were in favour of stopping fighting, the younger men might not want to. That being the case patrols could then forbid fighting, and the younger men would have to obey.

For the most part I think this attitude was sincere, though the BANANDA/TAI'IA fighting which was restarted after I left the area might cast doubt on it. However while this patrol was in the area, it mediated at compensation payments on two separate occasions, and I feel that this may be regarded as a gesture of confidence. On the whole, the patrol was accorded a very satisfactory welcome, and I think that provided follow-up patrols can visit the area shortly, it will not be difficult to extend our control over these people. The area further to the north-west would probably come under the same category, and I understand that as soon as staff is available, the A.D.O. Tani proposes extending his influence into the BUNA Forks area.

The northern HANO area is very peaceful, and the only point I shall record here is the still firm belief in sorcery that was elicited. The Administrative regulations on the matter were expounded, and the people in general and Village Constable PAGA (Baiyu) in particular were told that from now on positive action would be taken to stamp out this belief.

was found that previous records require

The whole period is of short duration, lasting only a few days, the first of which is ~~unoccupied~~ occupied with making the great wig associated with the custom. The final stage consists of perambulating round the court

* Ref. Kitchin P/R No. 5 of 52/53, page 3, by myself.

Here goes that at one time there were no men or women in the world. However the animals, birds and reptiles raised up people and fostered them. When they were grown up they lived by themselves, but each new clan venerated its original foster-parents, and were not allowed to kill or eat them - thus we have the Gaurah Pigeon clan, Wallaby clan, Cassowary clan, Possum clan and so on, each forbidden to eat the animal bearing its name.

THE GREAT FLOOD

'In the beginning everyone lived in the country as they do now. One day, while the women were sitting round the fire in their house, water started to come up through the fireplace. They were frightened and ran outside and told their men. The men came and saw it, and found the water pouring out of the ground like a river. They were very frightened because quickly the water joined other rivers, and they began to rise and rise, and as they rose they covered all the low ground and then the mountains too, and everyone was drowned. quite often nowadays when women are sitting in the ground they find

* I have used this name, due to the lack of any other describing the language spoken by the natives living in the area from the Waga River to Mt. Talibu. Dialectal changes occur in this area, but the basic language is the same.

Blurred Document

- 16 -

The Hags who were responsible for the original fight, now live at POCOMANT in the lower Poma Valley, and they as well as the Virgins have been instructed to pay compensation for the seven people who were killed in the first attack, to which both sides have agreed.

The native attitude to the patrol in the POCOMANT Basin was entirely satisfactory on the whole, and a very willing spirit of co-operation was displayed as soon as the people were aware of our intentions. Since this was the initial patrol to the area, no direct questions were asked, though the people were warned that further patrols would be through the area in the not too distant future, to check on the veracity of the promises given us that there would be no further fighting. Some of the older men then said that patrols would be welcome, and the younger the better, because though they were in favor of stopping fighting, the younger men might not want to. That being the case, patrols could then forbid fighting, and the younger men would have to obey.

For the most part I think this attitude was sincere, though the POCOMANT/TAI'IA fighting which was restarted after I left the area might contradict it. However while this patrol was in the area, 15 individual compensation payments on two separate occasions, and I feel that this may be regarded as a gesture of confidence. On the whole, the patrol was successful a very satisfactory volume, and I think that provided follow-up patrols can visit the area shortly, it will not be difficult to extend our control over these people. The area further to the northwest would probably come under the same category, and I understand that as soon as staff is available, the 1st Lt. Tait proposes extending his influence into the POMA Basin area.

The Northern POMA area is very peaceful, and the only point I shall record here is the still firm belief in sorcery that was elicited. The Administrative regulations on the matter were expounded, and the people in general and Village Constable POMA (Hapi) in particular were told that from now on positive action would be taken to stamp out this belief.

Correction

Blurred Document

- 17 -

2. ANTHROPOLOGICAL

The people living in the country between the Tagari River and the Marim Range all belong to the Bari tribe, and the languages, customs, way of life and agriculture are identical with those of the people on the eastern side of the river. Beyond the Marim Range, the ethnological type changes, and the generic name 'TUNIBA' is applied to the KUMUKA, IALU, URUNUSU, GORU, and NAKA tribes who live south of the Marim Basin on the other side of the range.

Perhaps the most interesting feature observed in the Marim Basin is the extent of the authority of the YDE leader. His authority appears to extend considerably beyond the limits of the ceremony itself, and being the most influential indigenous leader, he is a powerful force for good or evil. He has not got a counterpart in the Lower Tari area, where the Yoge ceremony is not performed, but Yoge leaders exist in the Bari Basin and in the PAIBARI and GORU Mountains area. Ostensibly the power of these men is limited to the Yoge ceremony, but they derive their additional power from the fact that they are in a position to refuse to perform Yoge for anyone who disagrees with them. Thus they can decide whether or not clans will fight or make compensation payments, even though these decisions may not affect their own clans.

A check was made on the accounts of the NAKA custom, and it was found that previous records require amendment.*

The whole period is of short duration, lasting only a few days, the first of which is ~~usually~~ occupied with making the great wig associated with the custom. The final stage consists of parading round the coun-

* Ref. Nataka P/R No. 5 of 52/53, page 6, by myself.

Here goes that at one time there were no men or women in the world. However the animals, birds and reptiles raised up people and fostered them. When they were grown up they lived by themselves, but each new clan venerated its original foster-parents, and were not allowed to kill or eat them - thus we have the Goshu Pigeon clan, Wallaby clan, Cassowary clan, Possum clan and so on, each forbidden to eat the animal bearing its name.

THE GREAT FLOOD

'In the beginning everyone lived in the country as they do now. One day, while the women were sitting round the fire in their house, water started to come up through the fireplace. They were frightened and ran outside and told their men. The men came and saw it, and found the water pouring out of the ground like a river. They were very frightened because quickly the water joined other rivers, and they began to rise and rise, and as they rose they covered all the low ground and then the mountains too, and everyone was drowned. Quite often nowadays when women are washing in the stream they find

* I have used this name, due to the lack of any other describing the language spoken by the natives living in the area from the Sage River to Mt. Ialibu. Dialectal changes occur in this area, but the basic language is the same.

Blurred Document

- 17 -

2. ETHNOLOGICAL.

The people living in the country between the Tagari River and the Marus Range all belong to the Nari tribe, and the languages, customs, way of life and agriculture are identical with those of the people on the eastern side of the river. Beyond the Marus Range, the ethnological type changes, and the generic name 'TUMBA' is applied to the KUMBU, KALI, HUNDE, GURU, and NAKIA tribes who live south of the Marus Range on the other side of the range.

Perhaps the most interesting feature observed in the Marus Range is the extent of the authority of the YUM leader. His authority appears to extend considerably beyond the limits of the ceremony itself, and being the most influential indigenous leader, he is a powerful force for good or evil. He has not got a counterpart in the Lower Turi area, where the Yogo ceremony is not performed, but Yogo leaders exist in the Nari Range and in the PARIPARI and GURU areas. Ostensibly the power of these men is limited to the Yogo ceremony, but they derive their additional power from the fact that they are in a position to refuse to perform Yogo for anyone who disagrees with them. Thus they can decide whether or not clans will fight or make compensation payments, even though these decisions may not affect their own clans.

A check was made on the accounts of the NAKIA custom, and it was found that previous records require amendment.*

The whole period is of short duration, lasting only a few days, the first of which is unoccupied with making the great wig associated with the custom. The final stage consists of parading round the area

* Ref. Nataka V/R No.5 of 52/53, page 6, by itself.

Blurred Document

- 17 -

HANUARI INITIATION

try, and this is done on the final couple of days. There is no special leader of these initiates, and a bachelor who has just completed the 'course' normally acts as mentor. The remainder of the previous account appears correct.

Several accounts of the genesis of the people living in this area were obtained, and though in some cases apparently conflicting, they are included for their anthropological interest. Care was taken in checking them, but a young informant was used, and he made it clear that he was only relaying what he had overheard ~~stories~~ from older men. The chronology of the stories was difficult to ascertain, but I include them in what is apparently their correct sequence.

The first is a widespread belief of the origins of the highland people in the Southern Highlands District. A man and a woman used to live in the country to the south of the Harius range and they had three sons. The first was OBENA, the second TUBUBA and the third HURI. When they grew up, Obena was sent into the Waga Valley, and from him are descended all the KANUSP speaking natives, and their tribal name is still OBENA. The second son KEBEN TUBUBA was told to stay at home, and he is the fore-bear of the people who bear his name today. Huri went to the country between the Murphries and Harius Ranges, ~~is~~ is the father of the Huri tribe. When Obena and Huri left their home, they took with them all their good things - white pigs and axes, paint and shell, and that is the reason that the Tuguba people are so poor today.

The reason for the taboos placed on certain items of diet by certain clans has parallels throughout the folklore of the Territory. The story here goes that at one time there were no men or women in the world. However the animals, birds and reptiles raised up people and fostered them. When they were grown up they lived by themselves, but each new clan venerated its original foster-parents, and were not allowed to kill or eat them - thus we have the Scapan Pigeon clan, Wallaby clan, Casowary clan, Possum clan and so on, each forbidden to eat the animal bearing its name.

THE GREAT FLOOD

'In the beginning everyone lived in the country as they do now. One day, while the women were sitting round the fire in their houses, water started to come up through the fireplace. They were frightened and ran outside and told their men. The men came and saw it, and found the water pouring out of the ground like a river. They were very frightened because quickly the water joined other rivers, and they began to rise and rise, and as they rose they covered all the low ground and then the mountains too, and everyone was drowned. ^{But to often nowadays when women are sitting in the ground they find}

* I have used this name, due to the lack of any other describing the language spoken by the natives living in the area from the Waga River to Mt. Ialibu. Dialectal changes occur in this area, but the basic language is the same.

Blurred Document

- 18 -

old naked and stone axes. These belonged to the people who perished in the flood.

When everyone was dead, the flood went down again, and one day the sun came down to the earth, and saw that it was a good place, and wondered why there weren't any people. He made a little clay figure and left it on the ground and went away. The next morning he came back and he found a man there and he said "who are you and where do you come from?" The man replied that he had always been there because it was his place, and that he has the only one. The sun said "you weren't here when I came yesterday" and the man answered that this was his place. As they were just talking the sun made a model of a woman out of clay and put it on the ground. Then he went away and came back in the morning, and found a woman with the man. When he asked where she came from, the man replied that she had always been there, so the sun asked why he hadn't seen her yesterday. The man replied "she has always been here." When the sun found that they did not have a house or a garden he told them to make one, and to have children. He said "I will go away now, but later when I come back and call you must answer me."

In time the woman had a baby, and the same day the sun came again. Four times he called "HARAWA" (meaning "live person's mother"), but they did not answer him. He got angry and threw the gourd he was carrying onto the ground and it broke. Then he called "HAWAPAWA" (meaning "dead person's mother") and the woman answered. The sun then asked "why didn't you answer before?" The woman did not reply, so the sun went on "in that broken gourd was water which if you had given it to the child meant you would never have died. However you did not do as I told you, so now give the child milk from your breast, and in time you and the child will die." Then the sun went away and did not come down from the sky again.

The theme of this story and "Hungry and lost immortality", recorded in the Sage Valley (Sutaba P/R No. 1 of 33/54) is very similar.

THE WHITE RAIN

The third generation of old men from the time of the flood is now alive, and the infants are the sixth generation. In the first generation after the flood it started to rain one day, though not with ordinary rain, but with white stuff that was like the ground, and fell in great lumps. It rained for seven days, and all that time the sun did not come up once, but it was like night even in the day time. While it was raining some of the people went outside their houses, but most stayed inside. On the eighth day the rain stopped and the sun came out again. The people went outside, and saw that all the ground was covered in white, and all the trees were dead and all the sweet potatoes were rotten in the ground, as if they had been cooked, because the white stuff was very hot. However the people planted more sweet potatoes in the ground and the white stuff, when it had got cool, and they grew very quickly.

Below Mt. Faribari there is a woman who says that it will rain again as it did before when she has a boy. She also says that there is a pandanus tree nearby - his gross very straight and tall without a fork in it, and which has never fruited, when it fruited, and when her baby is born, then the rain will come. When it is going to come she will tell everyone, and they must make houses with very strong roofs and walls, and on the first four days they must collect firewood, and cut and dig food, and store water, because when the rain comes they will not be able to go outside.

3. TOPOGRAPHY AND COMMUNICATIONS

The country in the Lower Tari region has been described several times, so I will confine myself to a description of the area further west. The Tagari River runs in a deep valley from below the Vada and Nari River junctions to about the Iliba junction, and even below this the valley is

Blurred Document

- 10 -

this stretch, the first near the Wada junction, the second below Wariba, and the third at Simina'a. All three have steep descents to the river, and I estimate the average depth of the gorge at between 1500 and 2000 feet. On crossing the river by the TIBITIBI bridge, the first ascent brings one out onto a fairly level area at the base of Mt. TIMAKU and the UNALJE Range. In places, this has been cultivated in the past, but the former occupants have all returned to the Mamanda Basin. Leaving this area, the Unalje Range was ascended, near where the AVIA River pours over it in a breath-takingly lovely fall. This range consists of soft decomposing conglomerate, and several large landslides have bared its sides, so that they are plainly visible from some distance, and which have led to its being called Landslide Mountain.

West of the Unalje Range lies the AGIRASA Range, which forms the eastern boundary of the Mamanda Basin. It is bounded on the north and south by the Paranda and Adjala Ranges, and to the east by the main mass of the Marisa Range. LAKO Peaks and OIGIRA and its sister peak PAKIBANI are visible from all round the Basin, and so to a lesser extent are NE, KIPERWA, ANGWA and BOMA on the Maripias Range and INU and RIMI to the north.

The Mamanda Basin itself consists of a level expanse of alpine swamp, in which grows a variety of dwarf pine and several other high altitude marsh shrubs and plants. The Basin is drained solely by the WAKWA River, which has its outlet in a gap in the Paranda Range. Due to the fact that this gap is not deep, it does little more than take off the flood water, leaving the basin floor a swamp of varying depth. There is no doubt in my mind that the whole area could be drained efficiently if it were possible to deepen the Wajala River channel, and by so doing, a lot of valuable land could be obtained, not to mention a very fine airstrip. At the moment the land is waste.

South of the Avia river, limestone becomes much more in evidence, and continues south and south-east through to Lake Kutuba. The gorge below Simina'a where this patrol, and also Mr. Wren's last patrol crossed the Kil-cri is a most incredible place. The river, which further up is over 100 yds across, and full in the wet season with several feet of water in it, here passes through a chasm no more than 20 feet wide, spanned by a sapling bridge. The chasm is between 70 and 100 feet deep, but flood waters obviously fill it to within 20 feet of the top. Anyone falling into that chasm would never have a chance.

The rivers draining into the Togari do so either via deep gorges or in a series of cascades down the cliff faces. In the northern Namo area the limestone is extremely rough and the rivers spend as much of their time underground as above.

Roads and Bridges

Not much need be said about the roads in the area - in fact the less said the better. Efforts are being made to get the lower Tari roads fixed up, and with the appointment of village officials through the area, there should be an improvement.

In all I heard of four tracks that lead through the Marisa Range. These are:-

- (i) From KARRAMU and AJANDA (PAKE Clan), north west of TOBO. This is reported to be for two days over rough country, without food or route.
- (ii) From TOBO - one day only.
- (iii) From above TIBITIA, along the ANJANA Range - 2 days.
- (iv) The track traversed by Mr. Wren in Patrol No. 11-02/53.

The only bridge of note crossed by this patrol was that at TIBITIBI, across the Togari. The natives have been asked to refrain from cutting bridges at random, particularly in this case, because it is an amazing structure, and not easily replaceable.

Blurred Document

- 23 -

is at IBANA below Teabera, and near the Bonaria River. I did not have time to inspect it, but I was informed that it is largely grass, and though not of strategic importance at present, it might be worth while examining it at some future date. My informant said it was as big as the Tari strip, but that seems open to doubt.

4. MEDICAL AND HEALTH

The only observation of note made by this patrol, was the number of leprosy observed in the Mandala Basin. Five definite cases were seen, and the disease is reported to be fairly common. Subsequent patrols may be able to induce some of these people to go to Morasky for treatment, but no efforts were made along that line by this patrol.

Another interesting point was the three or four ginger haired natives seen. Definitely not albinos, and no one seemed to be able to account for their peculiarity.

Health among patrol personnel was only fair, and several cases of pneumonia and low-fever were treated. The ability of these natives to produce temperatures as low as 97.6° has never ceased to puzzle me. Carriers used by the patrol were roughly equal groups of Huri, Hama, and Habis, and all performed satisfactorily, though the Habis could have done with an electric shock now and again.

5. AGRICULTURE AND LIVESTOCK

The agriculture of the Mandala Basin takes the same form as that practiced in the Huri Basin and Lower Tari. On one or two occasions beans were seen growing, which I was told had come from the Huri Basin. There is considerable intercourse between these groups. For the most part, the soil in the Mandala Basin is only good. The population concentration is on the hills around the basin, and the arable land available is somewhat limited. Due to the practice of making gardens on the side of hills, there is much evidence of soil erosion, and considerable areas of land which are now considered useless were seen.

The condition of stock seen - in this country that term applies almost exclusively to pigs - was good, and as is usual round here, the pigs are well and carefully looked after.

6. MAP

The attached map is a modification of the 4 miles to the inch District Map, compiled originally by Messrs. Champion and Adanson. The area between 8° 15' S and 145° 00' E is based on aerial surveys conducted by the A'asian Pet. Co. Ltd., while the Mandala Basin area is original. On existing maps Mt. Sigira has been placed further to the north-west, and I have altered it to what I estimate is closer its true position. The whole area cannot be regarded as accurate, since the main peaks on the Marua and Maphria Ranges are not fixed conclusively, and their positions differ on different editions of the District Map. Rivers in the northern Nene area have been plotted on their estimated courses. As mentioned above, due to the nature of the country, it is difficult to trace their actual course.

7. VILLAGE OFFICIALS

The Lower Tari area can now be considered sufficiently advanced

Blurred Document

of V/C. Three natives were also selected for training as Medical Orderlies, and it is hoped to send these men, as well as some other trainees at present at Kutaba to the Idushala N.W.P.S. in the near future. At the conclusion of their course they will be returned to their villages, to act as Village Medical Orderlies. They were selected from Pawa in the lower Tari, and Ndipa and Holinia in the Nasa.

When all appointments are made, I consider the disposition of village officials in the lower Tari area should be standardized as follows.

Clan	Village	V/C Applicant	V/C Possibility
1. HUBE	i. PALA) ii. HOMA) iii. PURIBA)	GOTOMA (RIANE)	-
2. HUBU	i. LAMGHI) ii. PAI) iii. KUTIBI)	PANG (PAI)	-
3. ANOMA	i. HOI'IA) ii. PIMHONA) iii. MANURGA)	HESANA (HOI'IA)	-
4. KALMA	i. TAMBURA) ii. URASHI)	-	TABIRI, WAGHE or WANGH of TAMBURA
5. ABUSA	i. MARIBU) ii. MURUARO) iii. MASHANI)	-	GATE (MASHIRU)
6. PALANI) WABLANG) HEI'IA)	i. BERTARIA) Valley)	-	TAMBIRI or URAI
7. IGHOMA) YIRIGI)	i. BAKANI) Valley)	-	?

Care was taken to explain that when and if these appointments are made, they will in no way supersede existing indigenous leaders, and that young men were being chosen so that local chiefs will be able to take their places in Village Councils when they are set up.

8. CENSUS AND STATISTICS

The census carried out by this patrol was complementary to the initial census compiled earlier this year, and was not a census check, except in the northern Nasa area. In the lower Tari, conducting a census is a painful affair but in time the people will realize what it is about, and stop treating it as a great joke, better avoided if possible. I am of the opinion that there are still large numbers in this area who remain unrecorded. The migrational trend that will be noticed in the Nasa figures result from the fact that the initial census was compiled while most of the Sisibia people were living at Wamai'au in fear of attacks by the Iate people. They have since returned to their own village.

No head counts were carried out in the Nasa Basin area, but I estimate that the area carries a population of somewhere in the vicinity of 2,000. A further population concentration was reported in the Mt. Sigira area.

.....
G.H.F. Ferrell

Blurred Document

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutuba Patrol Report
No. 3 of 53/54

APPENDIX "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No. 1300 I/Opl. ANDRU

30 days

Conduct and ability good. A good man, with intelligence, initiative and experience.

No. 1352 Const. ANEA

30 days

Conduct and ability very fair. A steady man, though not outstanding. Was senior constable and did a satisfactory job.

No. 8351 Const. BIKIYAU

30 days

Conduct and ability fair. Very young and not nearly as wise as he thinks himself. Is learning, and though a trial at times, did reasonably well.

No. 777 Const. GINI

30 days

Conduct and ability average. Is so shy that at times he appears sullen. Was one of the older hands, and has a fair grasp of the essentials. An improvement on earlier attempts.

No. 7625 Const. GABA

30 days

Conduct and ability good. A very keen youngster, and the only constable on the patrol who appeared wide awake all the time. Is gaining in experience, and one day will make a good N.C.O.

No. 8333 Const. NATU

30 days

Another young member, who performed satisfactorily though not brilliantly. Has an impediment in his hearing which if not allowed for makes him seem stupid at times. Conduct and ability average.

No. 7608 Const. GALIA


30 days

Conduct and ability fair. Is scarcely noticeable on patrol, but manages to do what is expected of him.

No. 7961 Const. GAYURI

12 days

Was sent back from MARISU with surplus carriers. Did well while with the patrol, but wasn't missed. Conduct and ability fair.


G.H.T. Ferrell
PATROL OFFICER

Lake Kutuba, S.N.D.

Blurred Document

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutaba Patrol Report No. 3 of 52/54

APPENDIX "C"

Report on TENE-FANI and -TIBU Ceremonies of the HURI Tribe.*

1. INTRODUCTION

This ceremony has been reported by previous patrols (vide Tani P/R No. 1 of 52/53 and Hutaba P/R 3 of 52/53), but I do not believe a full account of it has been made before. This patrol was camped at TIBINA for four days where the TENE dances were in progress, and some time was spent attempting to analyse the various stages of the custom, and to obtain some interpretation of the ritual carried out. This latter was more difficult than anticipated, since only one man in the area is able to perform the "magic" involved, and he alone knows what the significance of each stage is. In the Tibina dance, this was LIGUARI**, and he refused politely to enlarge on the rites involved, and as much as said "you have eyes - see for yourself." All the ritual involved is a close guarded secret, and passed on from one leader to the next in such a way that the remainder of the population cannot learn what it is all about. The Master of Ceremonies himself is much respected by the rest of the group, and is probably the most influential indigenous leader within his own area. As far as I could find out there are two such leaders in the area to the west of the Hihori, one in the MANARUA Basin, and one in the GIGIRA and PARIRARI Mountains area.

2. EXTENT OF AGREEMENT AND PERIOD BETWEEN CELEBRATIONS

Most of the Huri tribe performs TENE from time to time, but a noteworthy exception is the Lower TANI area (the BENARUA, BANARE, IRI, PAUA and HONJARI Valleys) where though it is known, it is not practised. People from this country frequently visit areas where it is held, and attend as visitors.

There are no hard and fast rules as to when and how often a celebration will be held. A village or clan will decide that it wants a Tene Dance to take place. The clan leaders will then contact the local Tene chief, who will decide on the actual date of the dance. The period between dances organised by any particular clan varies, and may be anything between five and fifteen years. A major consideration in the fixing of a time is the number of pigs available. Thus, if due to death payments, disease or other factors there are insufficient mature pigs, Tene will not be put on. When the requisite number is available, and provided other factors are equal, the Tene chief will be contacted, and preparations got under way. Since, as mentioned earlier, there is only one man in an area who can preside at Tene, his services are at a premium, and in a favourable season, he may be called upon to ~~serve~~ perform several times.

3. PREPARATIONS

The first stage of the ceremony is the issuing of invitations to all whom it is desired should attend. More often than not this appears to be an open invitation, and even groups that have recently been at war with the host may be expected. It is interesting to note that though a Tene Chief's clan may be on shooting terms with another group, the chief himself is at liberty to visit the enemy without fear of being attacked, provided the other group belongs to the Huri tribe.

The next stage is the building of the various houses required. These come under two categories:

- (i) HURUBUA - the house in which TENE-FANI takes place, and
- (ii) The pig-killing and roasting houses, of which there are three types, viz.

*. TENE is the name of the whole proceeding, and consists of TENE-TIBU (TIBU = to dance, shout or sing) and TENE-FANI (FANI = to strike).

** LIGUARI IS NOT THE man's real name. During the ceremony there is a prohibition on his using his own name and instead uses a pseudonym.

Blurred Document

- 11 -

- a. LIRU'UNDA - pigs killed in these houses are given to the Togo Chief,
- b. HONIANDA - the pigs killed in these houses are in memory of the white men whom legend has it, used to live in the area.
- c. HIRAKANJA - the 'Sun' slaughter room. Pigs killed here are in honour of the sun, which is supposed to be the people's father.

These houses are all built by the host clan with the assistance of any outsiders who are asked to help. Apparently some difference occurs from area to area in the construction of HIRAKANJA, though each area is governed by tradition in this matter, and the houses do not vary from time to time, so I will confine myself to a description of the house seen at Tibina. This was approximately 40' long, with an ungabled roof rising from about 4' at one end, to 20' at the other, the structure being some 14' wide. At the low end of the house there was a small ante-chamber or passage, on each side of which were stacked cords of firewood, to be used later in the fires down the length of the house. Two platforms built about 18" off the ground, ran down the whole length of the house, on each side. In between, the ground was stamped flat, to be used later as a fireplace. The roof of the house was thatched with pandanus fronds and kunai, and was walled with green branches and leaves, more or less haphazardly. A small entrance was left in the end wall below the high roof, with a little verandah, and outside this a small courtyard was fenced off with brush-wood, and a lean-to erected with a grass roof, where pigs were later roasted, and where men seeking respite from the smoke inside the house could take a breath of fresh air if it was raining.

The small houses used for the slaughter, butchering and cooking of pigs, are all similar, standing on four or six posts, with a grass thatched roof; they are generally unwallied, and are very temporary structures. Some of them have minor differences, perhaps a pandanus frond roof, or a small partition down the middle, or a wall of fence stakes, but these depend on the whim of the builder. They are about five feet high and eight feet square, and are much the same anywhere Togo is held.

4. DANCES

The timetable adhered to is always the same, and events occur in the following order:

- 1st four days - dances from about 10am to 1pm.
- Afternoon of 4th day - preparation of KUMBUK with ceremonies inside house.
- Night of 4th day - Actual Togo-Furu ceremony, culminating with the gantlet-run at about 4am. on the 5th day.
- 5th day - pig killing and feast.
- 6th, 7th and 8th days - dances, switch fights and general merriment.

There are three specialized dances involved in Togo-Furu, which are performed by pairs of men, and which are rarely witnessed by the remainder of the population. The general dance consists of all the people who wish to partake forming in a large group (often numbering over 300 souls) who are led up and down the dancing ground by women painted in with red and white ochre. The dance takes the form of a rhythmical stamping of feet as the group trots up and down the dance ground, accompanied by a version of the Huri yodel, with half the dancers doing the roar, and half the wail, alternately. Every one that comes to the dance is decked out in their brightest feathers, with painted faces. White cockatoo feathers were most popular, and most importance is attached to decorating the wig. The women for the most part are not decorated, though usually they wear new grass skirts. All the men hold bow and arrows as they dance, with possibly a knife or a spear in the other hand.

The three specialized dances warrant separate attention, and they are as follows:

Blurred Document

- 111 -

(i) SANI-SANGANA

Literally this means "dance of the Red Bird of Paradise", and is performed by pairs of men or boys. These pairs must be exactly similar as regards age, height, build, marital state, prowess etc., though one pair may differ from the next. Usually a single pair is sent by each of the visiting clans. Ornaments and decoration are similar, and the whole body is painted with red ochre. Designs are superimposed on the red in white and yellow paints, with special attention being paid to the face. Round the waist a broad belt is worn, made of woven fibre, with fine patterning in black and white. Arm bands of similar make are worn above the elbows. The normal string sporran is worn below the body belt in front, while at the back a plume of 'TANIED' (*Festuca Pruticosa*) leaves is worn like a bustle. The head dress differs from pair to pair, in the case of boys none being used, while some men are content with their normal wig neatly ornamented. In some cases the men wear the special HANUA-SI wigs, freshly decorated and covered in red ochre. While the dance is in progress, a bow and bundle of arrows is clasped in one hand, and a single bamboo bladed arrow in the other. Each day fresh paint is put on and the ornamentation touched.

The dance itself consists of each pair running at a sort of jog-trot, up and down the dance ground. They keep carefully in step, and every ten or twelve paces the pair stops and marks time, kicking the heels high. This goes on indefinitely while the main dance is in progress, and the dance is an intrinsic part of the Toge ceremony, never being performed separately.

(ii) KUNIA

This dance is very similar to SANI-SANGANA, and is also performed by a similar pair of men or boys. However instead of carrying bow and arrows, drums are used, which are beaten in time to the jog-trot. Also instead of kicking up the heels during the pause, the men merely bob up and down from the knees, still beating their drums.

This dance is not carried out solely at Toge, though when Toge is performed so is KUNIA. It is also used when pigs are killed at a dance initiated to heal a sick man.

(iii) KUTU

This dance is rather different, and is performed by only one man. He is dressed similarly to the dancers of the other two dances, though in addition has a great plume of lacy bamboo leaves right up his back to above his head. He holds a drum in his hands, and does not dance nearly as much as the others. His step is similar to KUNIA, though more infrequent. I only saw this dance performed on the 4th day, and it is only used at Toge.

5. MAGIC

These rites are all performed on the afternoon of the 4th day of the ceremony, before the gauntlet was run. The significance of each of the actions described is not known, since I was unable to get an interpretation. The order in which they were carried out is, I believe, standard. Due to the confusion prevailing, I was not able to see exactly what was going on all the time, and I may have missed some details.

(i) The Toge leader gathers his aides together, and they all huddle round in a circle. In the middle of the circle are eight or nine boys from the host clan. A small hole is dug, and to the accompaniment of chants and incantations, a small Taro plant is planted and then removed.

(ii) The party then shuffles along the ground, with numerous halts, and all the time the boys in the middle are digging a drain, which is filled in again by the feet of the people coming behind. This goes on till the group reaches the enclosure of the house *Parvada*.

(iii) Just outside the house are ten small grass covers, similar to bird traps. At each the group stops, and the leader clicks up a stick planted beside the structure. He takes a walk, and while chanting an incantation taps each of the boys on the back with it.

Blurred Document

- iv -

(iv) The whole group then enters Kurwala, with the boys still on their hands and knees. They remain in the house till the whole ceremony is over, and I believe they are regarded as being incarcerated for previous minor delinquencies.

(v) The helpers of the leader then line up on each side of the house, and several chants are sung.

(vi) A dead possum is tied to a stick, and one of the party takes it, entering by the low end, and carries it down the length of the house dropping it at intervals of about four feet, to the accompaniment of shouts from the men on the platforms.

(vii) The young men wrapped in grass from head to foot are dragged through the house, one after the other, again to rear from the men.

(viii) Two old men perform a rite of making fire. They stumble, fall, and roll about as if in a frenzy, while other men hold them and rub them in the ground. They do this several times down the length of the house.

(ix) Numerous songs and chants are sung, accompanied by shuffling and stamping feet. The house has now been prepared and everyone leaves it except for the boys.

The next stage consists of the slaughter of about ten pigs, which are given outright to the leader of the ceremony. These he butchers, and distributes them among his helpers, and they are roasted during the evening.

Preparations for the ceremony continue during the evening after the fires have been lit. These are principally to do with the fire, and each dance is different. As they are performed on and off for about six hours, and none takes more than a few minutes to complete, they are too numerous to describe in detail. Mr. Carey has mentioned one in his report - then one like a rather weird form of "Dance-a-laisy". I will add two more which are of interest. The first consists of one man on each side of the fire taking a stick and prancing up and down the house with the stick over the flames. As he comes to each upright in the structure, he changes hands in a very complicated manner, so much so that it had to be done several times before the Master of Ceremonies was satisfied it had been done right. The second was performed by about six men on each side of the house, to a riot of noise and smoke. Each man took a burning brand, and to the yells and shouts of everyone else stamped up and down the house, beating the brands against the posts amidst showers of sparks. This dance appeared to have more than a coincidental phallic significance, and was performed in an absolute frenzy of excitement. The whole effect was decidedly Saturnalian.

6. TAM-FAH

After these dances and chants had been going on some considerable time, at a signal from the Master of Ceremonies everyone quietened down, and a group of boys entered the house from the low end. By this time the fires were a glowing mass of coals, and to a roar of voices and the stamping of feet the boys raced over the fires and out of the other end of the house, in the process sending up clouds of smoke from the charred up coals. As they ran, the men lined up each side of the house lashed at them with their switches, but due to the smoke and the speed at which the boys ran, not much damage was done. After the first batch had been through, others followed, sometimes in groups, sometimes singly, till all who were to run had been over the course. In the latter stages, some older men (90 to 25) walked through the house, without being beaten. This was when the fires were almost extinct.

I examined several of the boys the next day, and for the most part they had no marks of the night's trial on their feet. There were a few sores on their backs, but nothing serious. I attribute the fact that they do not get burnt to (a), the speed with which they run through the house, (b) the natural toughness of the native feet, and (c) the rapid extinction of the fires after the first few lads have been over them. As a spectacle, the ceremony is impressive; as an ordeal it is not.

It may be opportune at this stage to say that the ceremony is not an initiation in the ordinary sense of the word. As near as I could get, it appears to be a chastisement to the youths for petty sins of omission and commission, during the past years, such as disrespect, disobedience, unfilial behaviour (and so on).

After the ceremony in the house is finished, the men and youths all go outside, and after some milling around, battle is joined between the older, married men, and the youngsters. Each side is armed with a thin switch in the right hand, and a bundle of switches in the left. The latter they use as a shield, while they attempt to whip their opponents with the single switch. Not everyone takes part, and many showed a wholesome respect for their hides. Many very sore backs were seen as a result of these fights shortly after the sun rises the 5th day, the battles stop and pig-killing and feasting starts.

7. COOKING

The total number of pigs killed varies from place to place, and at Tibina about thirty were slaughtered and distributed, special attention being paid to LINUARI. Each group cooks its share separately, and the women folk wait around to collect their share of blood and tripe.^{**} There are some rites performed in connection with the pig-killing, but I was not able to get details of these, and neither was their significance explained.

After the feast is over, various other dances and "games" are held, but this patrol did not witness the concluding days. I believe that most of what is of importance has been recorded above.

* The near brawl that took place at Tibina was an incident that does not usually occur.

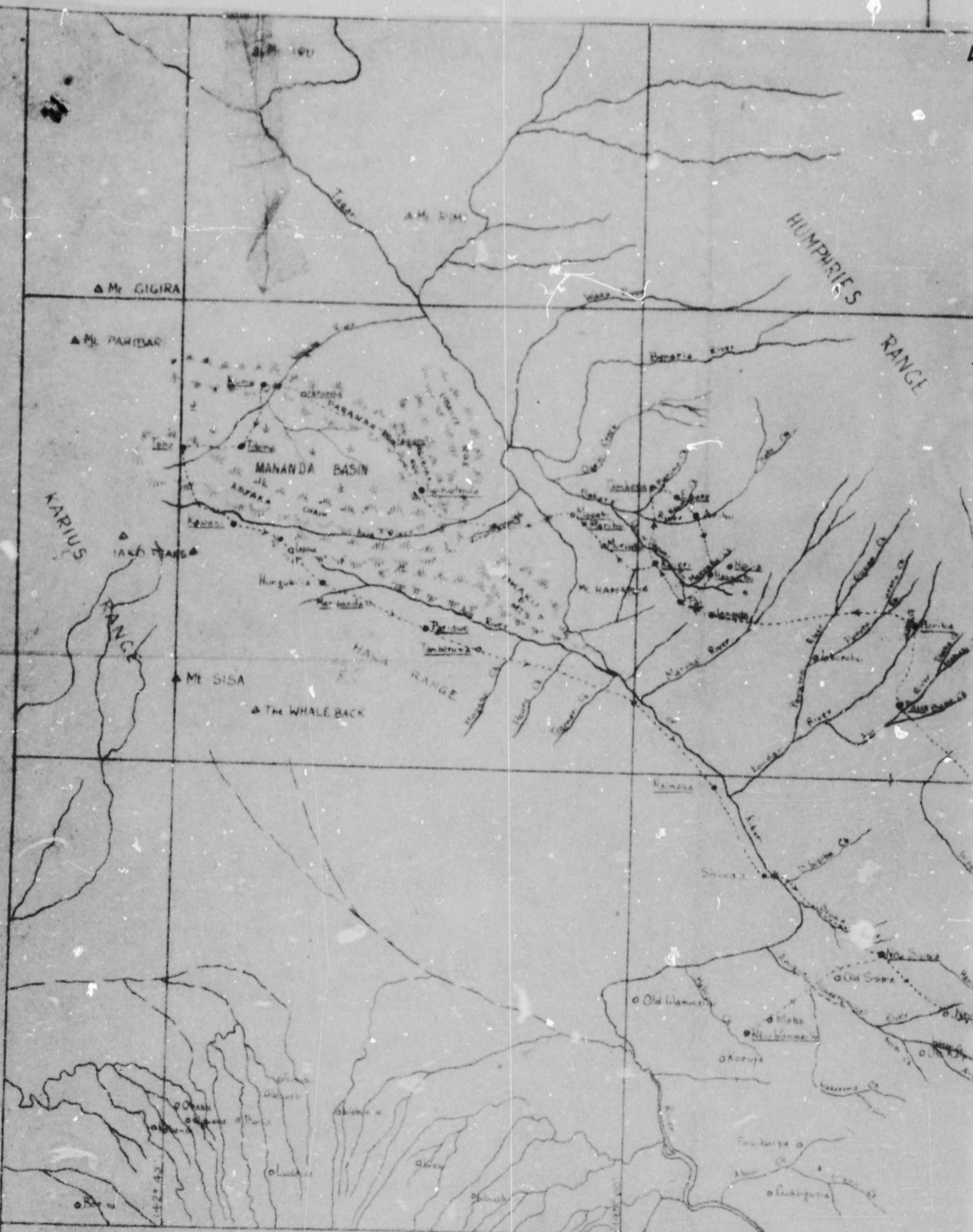
** Women have no part at all in the actual Tago-Fasi. They are only permitted to perform at the dances before and after.

.....

C.E.F. Ferrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutuba, S.H.D.

20th November, 1958.



- Kung o - Patrol Camps
- Hoi o - Occupied Villages
- Iappa o - Other Villages & Clearings
- * * - Marsh & Swamp
- Patrol Route



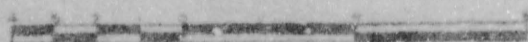
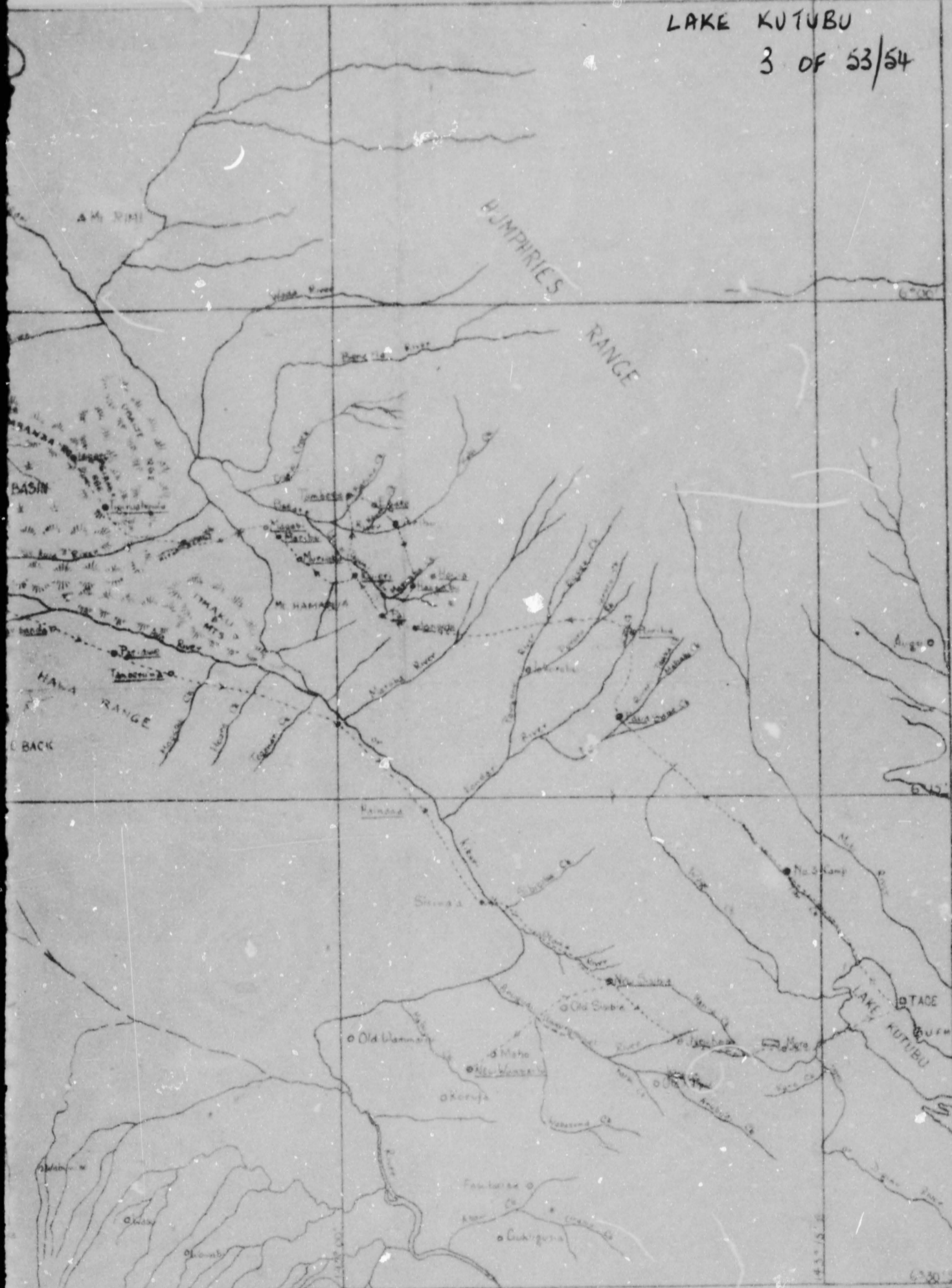
SCALE = 1:250,000

Small

790 LAKE WITING 26th November 1955

Prepared
by
Mans
and
area

LAKE KUTUBU
3 OF 53/54



SCALE - 1:250,000

Prepared for Patrol No 34 53/54
Based on aerial surveys carried out
by R.P. Co. & on maps compiled by
Messrs. Chapman & Utam in and
subsequent patrols. November 1950
area original

Cornell

LAKE KUTUBU 26th November 1953



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

SPECIAL
SPECIAL
SPECIAL

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS Report No. 4 of 53/54

Patrol Conducted by C.E.T. TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

Area Patrolled FORE Patrol Post, and SAMBERIGI Valley.

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans Nil

7 R.P. & N.G.C.

Natives 15 Carriers as required.

Duration—From 19/12/1953 to 11/2/1954

Number of Days 55

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No.

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services 10-52/53 Currently in area, establishing the ERAVE P/P.

Medical Nil/...../19.....

Map Reference Sketch Map of Patrol 10 of 52/53 ex LAKE KUTUBU.

Objects of Patrol Reinforcement of Patrol 10 of 52/53, led by Mr. W.J. Brand, P/O.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

1 /19

Assistant District Commissioner Officer

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation £ NIL

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund £ NIL

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund £ NIL

Personal File Notes Dept.

30-18-54

25th Feb, 1954

The Director of Civil Aviation,
PORT MORESBY.

ERAVE Patrol Post - Southern Highlands
District.

For your information, please note that
the new Patrol Post in the Southern Highlands District
which has sometimes been referred to in the past as ERAVE,
FORE or RSIMBERIGI, should be known and referred to from
now on as ERAVE Patrol Post.

A.A. Robertz
(A.A. Robertz)
Director. DDC. M.A.

~~PA~~

PA

DS30-18-54

25th Feb, 1954

The District Commissioner,
MOENDI

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report No. 4/53-54.

The Report of the above Patrol was brought to this Headquarters by Mr. C.E.T. Terrell, Patrol Officer, when on his way to Australia to take recreation leave.

Mr. Terrell carried out the tasks allotted to him and described in this Report with commendable perseverance. The work of establishing a Patrol Post in an area such as Fore on a solid foundation, requires much patience, tolerance in dealing with primitive people and arduous effort.

It is best not to attempt too much at once with a limited staff. First establish the station and airstrip while maintaining the influence gained in areas in the immediate neighbourhood of the station, then later gradually push out that influence and control farther and farther until it meets similar spheres of influence which have been established from the other stations in the District, nearest at hand.

It would be a mistake for instance, to interfere in native affrays in a distant area which have been going on for generations, until it is possible to follow up initial contacts with regular patrols so that it can be ensured that acts which have been forbidden, have in fact ceased, or wrong doers can be apprehended and punished as the case may be.

The immediate problems raised by Mr. Wren in his covering memorandum will be replied to by radio.

The Director of Civil Aviation will be informed regarding the name, Brave Patrol Post, as requested.

AAH
(A.A. Roberts)
Director: DCS&NA.

c.c.ADO. Lake Kutubu



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

30/16/54

In Reply Please Quote

No. 9/30-1/54

Sub-District Office,
TAGE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

16th February, 1954.

The Director of District Services,
PORT MORESBY

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No. 4 of 53/54

Please find attached above Patrol Report, carried out by Mr. Patrol Officer Terrell.

2. As Mr. Terrell has reported, he was sent down to reinforce the detachment at ERAVE. As he is proceeding on leave on the 20th he was withdrawn and a MENDI Patrol under command of Mr. Patrol Officer Ford is temporarily taking his place. Mr. Cadet Patrol Officer Battersby will leave Kutubu in sufficient time to arrive at ERAVE before Mr. Ford leaves there.

3. Mr. Terrell was sent down to ERAVE with instructions to move to the SAU area and protect the life and property of Her Majesty's subjects living in these villages along the line SAU/ ERAVE. In addition he was instructed to carry out a census check of the villages of MASIKI and SAU which were not complete. It has been found in this Sub-District that the taking of census at the appropriate time is a first class measure of native administration. In this ~~present~~ instance two aspects were in mind; should anyone be murdered, reasonable evidence is available that such an individual did exist after reference to the village census book, and again when labour is required for Public work it is possible to readily assess the potential.

4. At the moment there are two problems which have to be born in mind constantly, in constructing the ERAVE airstrip. Labour for work on the strip and food for feeding that labour. The second problem has now been overcome by means of airdrops. However now that food is available it is necessary for a European officer to personally recruit labour. This was done by Mr. Terrell.

However from reading the report and its appendices it will be seen that instructions were issued from your Headquarters that Mr. Terrell and the O.I.C. Mr. Brand were to remain on the ERAVE station. Mr. Terrell was at ERAVE at the time and this instruction was passed to him through Mr. Brand the same day as it was received at LAKE KUTUBU. I would remark here that Mr. Brand is of course directly in charge of all activities within the area embraced by his post, which has been quite clearly laid down. On the 11th January, the District Commissioner, Southern Highlands arrived at Erave on a tour of inspection. At that time the radio link between Lake Kutubu and Erave was broken, and Erave only received a replacement set on the 25th January. While the D.C. was at Erave the question of labour to work on the strip was referred to him and he instructed Mr. Terrell to proceed to MASIKI and SAU to recruit that labour.

5. Since that date, instructions have again been given to me on two occasions by your Headquarters that two officers must be present continuously on the Erave strip. This in effect means that we will be unable to recruit and maintain sufficient labour to complete this strip by June as the natives subject to the jurisdiction of this post consist of three categories. The first could be roughly described as those natives who belong to the

SAMBERIGI, LANGURI and TSIMBERIGI tribes. These are cowardly creatures, who require the personal attention of a European officer before they will do anything they do not wish to do. The second category include the natives of the four villages in the vicinity of ERAVE, who are under complete control but still require direction. The remainder are all those people living to the north of the Erave River. These too are friendly but nervous, and although some have been and are working on airfield construction, require to be personally escorted to and from their villages by a European officer. It can be taken then that while this instruction stands, the only two alternatives are to post a third officer to Erave for the purpose of recruiting labour, or to import approximately 100 labourers from the TARI Sub-District.

Neither of these alternatives are particularly attractive as the maintenance of a European officer in the field involves a considerable strain on lines of communication, even though he lives modestly, while in the case of imported labour the upkeep of these is naturally more expensive since they are not in their own environment. I would firmly recommend to you that the best solution would be that Messrs. Brand and Battersby be posted to Erave, that Mr. Brand be allowed to leave that post whenever he wished for periods no longer than two weeks, on the understanding that such short patrols were undertaken to secure labour to work on airstrip construction.

6. One further aspect of the administration of the Erave post should be dealt with in this memorandum. At the moment I am under instructions to remain at Lake Kutubu, so that I can readily supervise, and advise your Headquarters of, the various activities that are going on in this Sub-District. This will mean that I am unable to supervise the movement of stores along the Kutubu/Erave L. of C. As can be readily understood a considerable volume of supplies is being moved through the whole time to Erave, since everything except rice is routed that way. The great bulk is carried by volunteers, who quite naturally require constant supervision and organisation by European officials. In the past this has been done by myself or other officers stationed at Kutubu and visiting Erave. However this does not seem to be practicable within the next four months at least. Could one of the newly arrived Cadets be posted to Lake Kutubu? When I was in Moresby recently, the Director did suggest this to me but I declined the offer then as I did not consider him necessary along the lines I was planning. Now however I am left with very little initiative in the dispositions of staff until June when it is hoped that light aircraft will be landing at Erave, and the position will be eased somewhat. With a cadet at Kutubu I should be able, provided nothing was happening at the time and I advised you first, to carry out short patrols of a weeks duration around Lake Kutubu, which would enable me of course to carry out the necessary supervision of stores movements.

7. Action has been taken to ensure that in future the patrol post and airstrip will be referred to as Erave, and not Fore. Could the Dept. of Civil Aviation be advised to this effect please.

8. I have instructed Mr. Terrell to present his report with my covering letter to Mr. Foldi personally, so that any aspects requiring amplification can immediately be dealt with. Mr. Terrell is familiar with my views.

.....
E. D. WREN
a/Asst. District Officer

c/c: D.C. E.H.D.

DISTROFF

KUTUBU

DS4I3	BRAND	CAN	RECRUIT	WHILE
FORD	AT	ERAVE	STOP	BATEPSBY
MUST	NOT	BE	LEFT	ALONE
BUT	COULD	ACCOMPANY	BRAND	IF
CONSIDERED	DESIRABLE	STOP	YOU	MUST
APPLY	DISCCM	FOR	CADET	FOR
KUTUBU	YOUR	9/30-1/54	OF	16/2/54
REFERS				

ADR

SERVICES
25.2.54

Fale

DISTROFF

KUTUBU

DS 407

FORD

MUST

BUT

CONSIDERED

APPLY

KUTUBU

REFERS

BRAND

AT

NOT

COULD

DESIRABLE

DISCOM

YOUR

CAN

BEHAVE

BE

ACCOMPANY

STOP

FOR

9/30-1/54

RECRUIT

STOP

LEFT

BRAND

YOU

CADET

OF

WHILE

BATTERSHEW

ALONE

IF

MUST

FOR

16/2/54

SERVICES

23/2/54.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Special Patrol Report LAKE KUTUBU No.4-53/54-

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS DISTRICT

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.T.TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....ERAVE Patrol Post and SAMBERIGI Valley.

PATROL PERSONNEL.....European
C.E.T.Terrell, O.I.C.

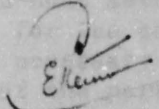
Natives
R.P. & N.G.C. - 7
Carriers - 15 as required.

DURATION.....19th December 1953 to 11th February 1954.
55 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(i) Reinforcement of Erave P/P.
(ii) To assist that Office in the main-
tainance of Law and Order in the
area under Government control.
(iii) To assist in building FORE airstrip.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch map of Patrol 10 of 52/53.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report on Police.
Appendix "B" - Correspondence pertaining
to patrol.
Appendix "C" - Map.


.....
C.E.T.Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

12th February, 1954.

but eventually the last of the loads arrived, and the Huris who had been brought specifically for this job were sent back to the station, while the patrol moved on down to Baurutage, helped on its way by Mubi natives that interpreter BAIKI had been sent through to brief earlier. Camp was made, and Baiki was treated for pneumonia which he had contracted after leaving Kutubu. As it was too late to buy food, once again rations were issued. The party at this stage consisted of one policeman, an interpreter, and 15 carriers. Village labour will be collected tomorrow to carry through the remainder of the loads.

Monday 21st December, 1953

BAURUTAGE to SUMBURU

No.3

Timetable

Dep. BAURUTAGE	0745
At. HEGISO	0825-0855
At OROKANA U.F.Mission	1130-1310
Arr. HARABUTU	1440
At KOKIABO	1600-1625
Arr. SUMBURU	1850
<u>Travelling time: Shrs. Omins</u>	

Sending all cargo and personnel on ahead of me in Baurutage canoes, to move through to Kokiabo and await me there, I moved upstream to Hegiso, where I purchased sago previously ordered. This was then loaded onto canoes, and with all available men, was sent in the wake of the patrol party. Stopping again briefly at HEREBU to recruit more carriers, I moved slowly down stream hearing everyone else ahead of me. They are all past masters of dilatoriness. I stopped for an hour or so at the Mission establishment at Orokana where I was the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Donaldson, and after a most undignified farewell during which my canoe capsized and I had an unasked for swim, I moved on down to the canoe landing near Harabuiu where we disembarked and continued overland to the KWAGE River. Here I found three more police who were promptly attached to the party, and we moved through to Kokiabo where I found everyone waiting. The available carriers did not quite go round, and six bags of rice had to be left behind to be brought through by these people tomorrow. Everyone set off, and we got through to Sumburu in quite good time.

Part of the party was fed on sago which had been left here by earlier parties, while the rest were given rice. No food was purchased.

Tuesday 22nd December, 1953.

SUMBURU to No.1 Camp

No.4

Timetable

Dep. SUMBURU	1220
Arr. No.1 Camp	1845
<u>Walking time: 5 hrs 40mins</u>	

With the exception of a few patrol carriers, everyone was sent off at 0730, the escorting police being told to camp at No.1. I remained behind to await the arrival of the rice that was left at Kokiabo yesterday, and when it arrived put it all into drums which were waiting here for that purpose. The carriers were not sufficient to get it all through, and over a dozen drums were left at Sumburu. On arrival at camp, I found that the remainder of the party had only just beaten me in. A large number of men have colds and temperatures, and no one was very well. Self down with a temp. of 104° when I got into camp. Probably 'flu.

Rice issued to everyone.

Wednesday 23rd December, 1953.

No.1 to No.2 Camp

No.5

Timetable

Dep. No.1	0735
At TESORO	1235-1240
Arr. No.2	1515
<u>Walking time: 6hrs 55 mins</u>	

Sent everyone ahead of me again, and I plodded along painfully trying to keep the stragglers up. The patrol had the aspect of the

Retreat from Moscow at this stage, with sick (or lazy) carriers spreadeagled beside their loads all up the track. Managed to keep some semblance of order in the rabble until I came across a load that somebody had dumped and fled. As everyone with me was loaded to the plimsol line, I carried the load the last couple of hours, and arrived in camp feeling murderous. My fond illusion that everyone was ahead of me was swiftly shattered on learning that about half the carriers had ducked off the side of the road complete with loads to rest when they felt like it. A number of men were legitimately sick; the rest were just plain lazy. It was to these that I directed remarks to the effect that if anyone arrived behind the official rear-guard in future, they would not get an option.

Medical attention was given to those asking for it. Myself in much the same condition as earlier.

Rations issued.

Thursday 24th December, 1953

No.2 Camp to FORE

No.6

Timetable

Dep. No.2

0720

Arr. FORE

1330

Walking time: 5hrs 45mins.

Once again I sent everyone on ahead of me, but this time I left a police rearguard, and gradually overtook everyone. I arrived about an hour ahead of the patrol, and when they arrived they were all stood down. There were several more cases of real sickness, and all were given treatment. Discussions with Mr. Brand followed while I slowly recuperated.

Friday 25th December, 1953 - Saturday 16th Jan. 1954

FORE

Nos.7-29

This period was spent at Fore. On the 26th December all Mubi village natives were sent home, and the Kutubu carriers were also returned to that station, as soon as they were well enough. On December 30th instructions were received cancelling my plan of moving into the Samberigi, and I did what I could to assist Mr. Brand in getting work on the strip under way with a rather larger labour line which it was possible to feed with the stores I brought through. Advice was received that an airdrop had been arranged for the end of January, and it was desired to further increase the strength of the labour force. This presented problems when we were unable to go out and recruit the labour required. On January 11th, a patrol led by Mr. D.C. Toogood arrived, and instructions were received to proceed with the Samberigi patrol. Since no repercussions had occurred there over the Tsimberigi fighting, the primary purposes of this patrol were census compilation and recruitment of labour. On January 3rd the ATHA transceiver went U/S, and at the time of my leaving Fore, our only communications were by means of runner.

Sunday 17th January, 1954.

FORE to SAWMILLI

No.30

Timetable

Dep. FORE

0725

Arr. EMBERI Riv.

0800

Arr. KUSAI'IEGIBU

1120-1140

Arr. SAWMILLI

1220

Walking time: 3hrs 55mins.

Using a small line of Fore labourers, the patrol moved through to Sawmilli, where camp was made, and the carriers were sent back. Word was left at Kusai'iegibu that I would be returning tomorrow to check the census and organise volunteers for work at Fore. Similar warnings given the Sawmillis.

Plenty of food^d was quickly bought for the very small patrol party. Salt and beads in most demand.

Monday & Tuesday 18th & 19th January 1954

SAWMILLI

Nos.31-32

On Monday I moved through to Kusai'iegibu, where a nearly full census was checked, and eligible men were divided into two lines, each to work on a week on week off basis at Fore. On my return to Sawmilli the same procedure was carried out. All five Sawmilli hamlets were checked during the day. While dealing with the Sawmillis, mail runners arrived from Kutubu, via Fore, accompanied by three new police. It was these people's non-arrival that delayed the patrol's departure from Fore.

The weeks labour quota was despatched on Tuesday, two police accompanying them to Kusai'iegibu, to make sure there was no mix-up. V/C IAWF of Sawmilli escorted the party right through.

More than enough food was always available, the women being most insistant that I should buy. I was pleasantly surprised by the attitude of the women who were far more friendly and bold than I had been led to believe.

Wednesday 20th January, 1954.

SAWMILLI to FAUAHARI

No.33

Timetable

Dep. Sawmilli	0700
Arr. BHAREGI	0730
At KAGIAME	0755-0810
Arr. FAUAHARI	0855
<u>Walking time: 1hr. 40mins.</u>	

Using Sawmilli carriers, the patrol moved on to FAUAHARI, a hamlet in the middle of the MASIKIK group. It was necessary to relay some of the stores as there were only seven men available. Word was sent out to all the MASIKI hamlets that I would be checking the census, and a start was made at Fauahari. A number of absentees were noted, most of the allegedly trading with natives in the Kikori area. This may or may not be so.

Ample food again available.

Thursday 21st to Sunday 24th January, 1954,

FAUAHARI

Nos.34-37

During this period all hamlets in the Masiki group were visited, and a number of absentees were again reported. Labour organised on the same lines as Sawmilli was sent through to Fore. When WABIAMARA was visited the first time only two men were in residence. Asked where everyone else was, I was told they were away trading. When the party was leaving the village I was told by the two boys who had run through to tell of the patrol's coming, that four men had run-away on the morning of the patrols arrival, after having been told specifically that their presence was required for the census. As a result of this the village was visited again by myself two days later, though without results. During the course of the second visit an accusation was made against Const. AREA that he had raped a native woman. The matter was thoroughly investigated, and insufficient evidence came to light to lay a charge. Area's story was corroborated by Const. GIMI who was with him at the time.

Monday 25th January, 1954.

FAUAHARI to SAU

No.38

Timetable

Dep. FAUAHARI	1135
Arr. POPWALAGAI	1230
Arr. SAU	1255
<u>Walking time: 1hr. 35mins.</u>	

L/Cpl. AVAIMERE was sent through to Sau to pick up men to carry the patrol through to that village, and when they arrived th we moved straight off. Word was left at POPWALAGAI that its census would be checked tomorrow, and camp was made above Sau Village. Due to the absence of most of the people in their gardens, the census was postponed till the morrow.

Tuesday 26th January to ~~Sunday~~ ^{Saturday} 30th January 1954

SAU

Nos.39-43

33

The five Sau hamlets were censused during this period, and the labour recruits sent through to Fore. Once again a large number of men were away, but in this case I should say that most of the claims were genuine. Previously I had accepted the trading excuse with reservations. It was also noted that the full permissible labour recruitment in this area has taken place, with up to 33% of the labour potential away working in Kikori and Moresby. During my stay at Sau three of four pneumonia cases were treated, apparently satisfactorily, as well as several minor complaints. Two disputes over pigs were settled amicably, and one alleged indecent assault case was heard but not proceeded with.

While visiting OGOMOBU hamlet, just above Sau, the Catalina flew over on its way to drop at Fore.

There was never any shortage of food, and I ended up with more than we could use.

Sunday 31st January, 1954.

SAU to FORE

No.44

Timetable

Dep. SAU	0825
Arr. FAUHAHI	0940
At KAGIAME	1030-1040
At SAWILLI	1140-1205
Cross EMBIRI CK.	1650-1725
Arr. FORE	1755

Walking time: 7hrs. 30mins.

The second line of men to work at Fore, relieving those sent earlier, were used as patrol carriers. Some time was spent rounding them up in the morning, which delayed our start somewhat. The patrol walked steadily all day, with brief halts on the way to allow stragglers to catch up. The relief lines from Masiki and Sawmilli were also collected en route. We were held up crossing the Embiri Ck., crossed just after the descent from the HUNGURU Range, by flood waters which had completely submerged the normal bridge.

Party stood down on return to Fore.

Monday 1st February to Sunday 7th February 1954.

FORE

Nos.45-51

Radio contact was not made with Kutubu until the 3rd, when Mr. Wren advised that a line of carriers had been despatched the day before. These were to be used by myself on my return journey. They duly arrived on Saturday afternoon, and final preparations for departure were made on Sunday. All surplus food and trade I had, I left with Mr. Brand, reducing my party to the barest minimum.

Monday 8th February, 1954

FORE to Bush Camp

No. 52

Timetable

Dep FORE	0640
At. No.2 (KOPARE)	1100-1155
At. TESORO	1330-1355
Arr. Camp (ASUMAI)	1505

Walking time: 6hrs. 50mins.

Getting away to a good start, the patrol walked well, getting through to a camp just before No.1. I had intended to go right through, but a certain amount of dragging appeared, and it was not essential that I make it. A much better effort than the down-ward journey.

Rice issued to all hands - the only swag I had with me.

Tuesday 9th February, 1954.

Bush Camp to SUMBURU

No.53

Timetable

Dep. ASUMAI	0700
At. No.1 Camp	0815-0830
Arr. SUMBURU	1300

Walking time: 5hrs. 15 mins.

The patrol again walked well, though once again the tail dragged a bit. On arrival at Sumburu, the village head man was approached, and told he would be required to give evidence in the murder case originating at Sumburu. He was very much against the proposal, and pleaded to be left out of it. He even offered a pig to avoid going to Kucubu, but after a deal of persuasive talk he eventually realised there was no way out, and became used to the idea. It was due to this that I remained at Sumburu instead of going on to HARABUIU.

Some trouble buying enough food to go round. Apparently these people were being quite honest when they said they were very short. It is odd because they have not been called on to supply anything to the parties going through. Eventually enough came in.

Wednesday 10th February, 1954.

SUMBURU to TUNUHUGU

No.54

Timetable

Dep. SUMBURU	0650
At IOMESI	0815-0830
At KOKIABU	1030 0900-0955
Cross Mubi Riv.	1040-1120
At OROKANA	1310- 1515
Arr. TUNUHUGU	1605

Walking time: 5 hrs. 50 mins.

Two police were left at Sumburu to await the arrival of a line of carriers due to come through in the next day or two, and take them through to Fore. This line was later passed, they being in canoes, while the patrol walked up the banks of the Mubi. Const. INGITA and interpreter SANGA were given charge of the Head man. He obviously wasn't up to keeping with the patrol, and Ingita, who is an old friend of his, was told to bring him through in his own time. One carrier who was sick last night held up the tail of the patrol, but everyone else got through in good time. Delays occurred in crossing the two rivers, but these are unavoidable. While I detoured to visit the mission, the patrol moved straight through to Tunuhugu, where I found camp already made when I arrived. Much better progress so far; shades of the downy money.

Food enough to feed a batallion bought for small trade, and I had to turn away as much as we bought.

Thursday 11th February, 1954.

TUNUHUGU to TAGE

No.55

Timetable

Dep. TUNUHUGU	0655
At. ISA (PIMAGA)	0820-0845
At. SAMAKA	1045-1155
At KESE	1300-1315
Arr. TAGE	1540

Walking time: 7 hrs 0 mins.

A mix up over canoes held up the patrol at Samaka for some time, and it wasn't till dark that the body of the patrol arrived. I went ahead, stopping at Kese to send canoes back, and then moving straight through to TAGE, where I reported to Mr. Wren. When the patrol got in it was fed and stood down.

END OF DIARY

NATIVE AFFAIRS.

Though the principal factor in the despatch of this patrol was the outbreak of fighting in the TSIMBERIGI Basin, this patrol had no opportunity of investigating the cause and effects, and no other information is available, amending Mr. Brand's original report.

Without a proper investigation it is not possible to say just what caused the fighting, but for what they are worth, I will put forward my opinions which coincide with Mr. Brand's.

In the first instance it appears that a dispute occurred between TEMOGAPARA, and SUMAMI and other TSIMBERIGI villages, after the pattern of innumerable other disputes in this area. Blood pressure rose on both sides, and though both had been warned that the Administration disapproved of fighting 'in toto', decided that this was probably the last opportunity they would get for a free for all before the post at ERAVE was in a position to implement the "stop-fighting" ban. When a Temogapara man was killed by a number of WAROs and MARAROGOs, and a pay back killing followed, it was taken as the signal for the Tsimberigi as a whole to fall on the village and virtually massacre the inhabitants. There was probably an element of curiosity in the decision to fight, prompting the people to find out just how far they could go, and by the apparent lack of interest shown so far by the Administration, they may feel they have nothing to worry about after all.


Some concern was felt that this attitude would extend into the Samberigi and Fore area, but fortunately it has not. I am sure that at no time has any group thought at all seriously of attacking the post at Fore, and the idea of a Samberigi attacking a Government patrol is paradoxical.

Though WARO was involved in the fighting the IANGURI area as a whole was not. The latter have been involved in a private brawl of their own with the folk to the south of Mt. Murray, and they may have been preoccupied. That fighting too has not been investigated fully, though I understand that Kikori has taken some action.

As far as the Samberigi and Fore valley people are concerned, they seem to be accepting Governmental rulings with a fairly good grace. About 100 natives from the two areas are now working at Fore on a semi-permanent standing, and 50 more are working voluntarily, roughly on a week on week off basis. During my absence in the Samberigi, a line of IANGURIs arrived, and some of them are working too. Their arrival seems to have been prompted by the older men of the community, who think the Government might be superfluous in their area, particularly when chasing murderers, and as a result decided that these men should act as community scapegoats.

The census check made by this patrol was not wholly satisfactory. A rather better showing was achieved than in the first attempt, but large numbers of absentees appeared, all reputedly away on trading expeditions. What people there were, were all co-operative after a fashion, and this is the only area I have struck in the Southern Highlands when women have outnumbered men in the line ups.

In conclusion I would say that it is regrettable that it has not been possible to take any stringent action in dealing with the Tsimberigi population. The Thumb-to-Nose attitude displayed is singularly galling at the best of times, and it comes very hard from people who will almost certainly be over the hills and far away when a Government boot first steps into their country.


.....
C.E.T. Terrell.
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutuba, S.H.D.

14th February, 1954.

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

R A D I O G R A M

No. 24

Prefix No.	Office of Origin	Words	Time
24	MCRESBY	44/43	30/1021

DISTROFF
KUTUBU

DS120 YOUR 166/14-1/53 UNDELETED REFERS STOP AS INSTRUCTED BY RADIO PHONE
CONVERSATION 15th TERRELL MUST REPEAT MUST REMAIN FORE WITH BRAND STOP
ALL EFFORTS TO BE DIRECTED TOWARDS COMPLETING AIRSTRIP AFTER WHICH
PACIFICATION OF DISTURBED AREA MAY BE ATTEMPTED

SERVICES

Date Stamp 30.12.1953/1120

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

DS14/1/61

15th Dec, 1953

The Government Secretary,
PORT MORESBY

Reported Fighting - Samberigi Valley

Further to signal from Kutubu, minuted to you this day, I have had Radio Telephone conversation with the Officer in Charge Kutubu, Mr. E.D.Wren, at 11 o'clock today. The following instructions were passed.

1. Patrol Officer Terrell with sufficient Police to bring ERAVE strength to 15, to proceed immediately to Erave Patrol Post.
2. No attempt to be made to stop fighting or apprehend the killers at this stage, but careful record to be made of any information which may come into the Patrol Post.
3. Brand and Terrell both to remain on the Erave Station and concentrate on the work of getting the airfield ready for light aircraft.
4. In view of the reported state of unrest, Officers mentioned to take every precaution to ensure against any possibility of a surprise attack against ERAVE station or any of the personnel based there.
5. Report that portable Radio Transmitter batteries are run down is acknowledged and every endeavour will be made to forward two sets of batteries by first transport.
6. Wren to submit a full and detailed report by first transport out of Kutubu.
7. Wren advised that another Officer will be found to undertake the Mendi/Erave Australasian Petroleum Company escort duty but that Wren still held responsible for assembling of carriers and the preparation of Police equipment etc. as if he were doing the job himself.
8. Consideration will be given at the appropriate time to the advisability of doubling the Patrol Officer escort which will accompany the A.P.C. Geological Survey operating in the Samberigi and eastwards to the Sirebi River.

Wren advised to watch the situation carefully and keep this Headquarters posted on any further developments which may occur.

It is not considered that the situation, as reported today, should in any way interfere with the plans of the A.P.C. Geological Survey of the Samberigi Valley, as the party will ^{not} be operating in this particular area until well on towards the end of February.

(Sgd.) A.A.R. per J.R.F.
(A.A.Roberts)
Director, DDS&NA.

Copy to: Assistant District Officer
Lake Kutubu

DS14/1/61

Confirming our radio conversation this day.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

COPW ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

168/14-1/53

Sub-District Office,
TAGE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

The Director,
District Services and Native Affairs,
PORT MORESBY

FIGHTING - TSIMBERIGI VALLEY

Please find attached a report by the Officer-in-charge of the ERAVE Patrol Post dealing with the outbreak of violence which I report to you briefly in my radiogram KUT92.

I have attached a map with the villages concerned underlined in ink for your convenience. TEMOGAPARA Village is not shown, but is, I believe some two to three miles to the east of SUMANI Village - one of the villages concerned in the fighting.

Mr. Patrol Officer Terrell has been instructed to move to SAU Village with police and remain there. This will ensure that fighting does not spread to the line SAU-MASIKI-SAWMILLI-FORE. The danger being that these people may attempt one last fling before they can be dealt with. An attempt of this nature was stopped before.

When I was at FORE recently I warned these villages concerned in this present fighting I would not tolerate fighting south of the ERAVE River. However as things stand I hope to move to Fore after the New Year and if this report is correct I shall insist on the maximum possible compensation payments being made. This of course, will hurt greatly.

In conclusion, I feel that until a few of these people are hung they will not be persuaded to cease their brutal killings. They are sneak killers and cowards.

For your information please.

(Sgd.) E.D.WREN

(E.D.Wren)

a/Asst. District Officer

c.c. D.C., S.H.D.
O.I.C., Erave P/P.

wound
ng in

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

7/31-1/53

ERAVE Patrol Post,
FORE,
via LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

19th December, 1953.

The Assistant District Officer,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

FIGHTING - TSIMBERIGI VALLEY

On the 1st December a man from SUMAMI Village in the TSIMBERIGI Valley reported that two men had been killed at TEMOGAPARA, also in the TSIMBERIGI Valley, a few days previously. From this and later reports, I learned that the following had taken place.

One morning at the end of November HOUWE, WAROBABASEGI, FARABU'IU, BERE, and SAGAMANDE, from the village of MAROROGO and WARO in the eastern SAMBERIGI Valley went to TEMOGAPARA Village, on the southern side of the TSIMBERIGI Valley, to remonstrate with SUMBU of TEMOGAPARA, who, they said, had been having illicit relations with LEMBERINIU, the wife of WAROBABASEGI. During the ensuing argument SUMBU was killed and the MAROROGO and WARO men then left. IOGEA, SUMBU's elder brother, who was in another part of the village at the time, heard of this and pursued the killers. He almost caught up to them and fired several arrows, but did not hit anyone. He was then struck in the left shoulder by a spear thrown by SAGAMANDE and the MAROROGO and WARO men were joined by friends who had been in hiding along the track. The attackers then moved off, and IOGEA returned to TEMOGAPARA.

That afternoon, while the villagers were gathered round a platform on which SUMBU's body had been placed, two SUMAMI men, MUMURIA and FAI'IA, who had been to visit the KERABI Valley area, came up the track to TEMOGAPARA on their way home. They had heard the wailing, and when they came close they asked who had died, and were told that SUMBU had died of an illness. When they approached to seek for themselves MUMURIA was struck down by axes wielded by TOREBA and EJENDA, both of TEMOGAPARA. His companion, FAI'IA was allowed to go free as the TEMOGAPARAS said they only wished to avenge themselves for the killing of SUMBU - I was told that MUMURIA belonged to the same clan, SOBOREBA, as several of the men responsible for SUMBU's death.

Several days later men from the villages of WARO, BESABURU, and MAROROGO in the eastern SAMBERIGI Valley and SUMAMI in the TSIMBERIGI, all fully armed, moved up to TEMOGAPARA village. They were met by TEMOGAPARA men and the ensuing fight lasted for two days, during which numerous men from both sides sustained arrow wounds but no one was killed.

Early next morning the attacking parties closed all the tracks from TEMOGAPARA and when it became light enough, they closed in on the village. The inhabitants panicked and there was a mad rush as they attempted to escape from the trap. IOGEA, who told me this part of the story, said that he had crawled into the undergrowth near his house and run into the bush. Late in the afternoon, when there was no one about, he crept back into the village. He said that the women's houses had been burnt down and he saw numerous bodies lying around, and identified the following.

WARAWE	(m/a)		KUMBIAME	(f/a)	
TEBINIU	(f/a)	- wife of WARAWE	ARE	(m/c)	- son of KUMBIAME
LOBUAME	(f/a)		IBINIU	(f/c)	- daughter of KUMBIAME
AWAME	(f/a)		BOGORAME	(f/c)	- " " " "
TAU	(m/c)	- son of AWAME			

According to IOGEA these people died as a result of axe wounds. There was no one else in the village, all the survivors presumably being in hiding in the bush.

Another TEMOGAPARA man, WEI'IARI, arrived here on the 14th December and told me of further killings. His story is as follows:-

"When TEMOGAPARA was surrounded I escaped into the bush and went to WARIMABU Village, on the southern bank of the Erave River, and contacted a female relative who brought food to me while I hid in the bush near the village. One morning I heard a lot of noise coming from the direction of the village and shortly afterwards my relative came to my hiding place and told me that two TEMOGAPARA women and three children, who had been sheltering there had just been killed. I knew that I would also be killed if I was seen so when it grew dark I left my hiding place and came here."

The V/C's of SUMAMI and BESABURU also reported in on the 14th December and the V/C Sumami said that he had heard rumours of the murder of the five women and children. According to him they were killed in retaliation for SOI, a WARIMABU man, who had been killed when a party of TEMOGAPARA men found him alone in his garden. Apart from this, the V/C was not able, or willing, to give any further information. He did not want to come in in the first place but was talked into coming by the V/C of BESABURU, NATABE, who had been sent by the head man of the LANGURI area in order to see that their fair name was not besmirched by rumours. I think that the V/C of SUMAMI was implicated in the killings, and in fact he was accused of murdering a woman when TEMOGAPARA was surrounded, but stoutly denied the accusation. Then, when he was returning from here to his village, he allegedly threatened to kill IOGEA of TEMOGAPARA, who made the accusation.

It seems at least sixteen people have been murdered and I think that probably more have met the same fate as it is rumoured that parties of men from WARO, MABOROGO, and SUMAMI are hunting for the TEMOGAPARA survivors in the bush. As you will realise it is difficult to obtain precise information on these murders from here and for this reason this report is rather sketchy. A real appreciation of the situation could only be obtained on the spot but I doubt whether the bodies of the slain TEMOGAPARAS will be seen when a patrol eventually goes into the area as apart from the fact that they probably still practice cannibalism I doubt that the killers would be stupid enough to leave such incriminating evidence.

(Sgd.) W.J.Brand
(W.J.Brand)
021.C. ERAVE Patrol Post.

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS

LAKE KUTUBU

No: 4 of 53/54

By: C. E. T. TERRELL P.O.

To: FORE Patrol Post and SAMBERIGI
Valley

30-18-54

25th Feb, 1954

The Director of Civil Aviation,
PORT MORESBY.

ERAVE Patrol Post - Southern Highlands
District.

For your information, please note that
the new Patrol Post in the Southern Highlands District
which has sometimes been referred to in the past as ERAVE,
FORE or RSIMBERIGI, should be known and referred to from
now on as ERAVE Patrol Post.

aar
(A.A. Roberts),
Director. DDS. HA.

9/30-1/54

Sub-District Office,
TAGB,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

16th February, 1954.

The Director of District Services,
PORT MORESBY

LAKE KUTUBU PATROL REPORT No. 4 of 53/54

Please find attached above Patrol Report, carried out by Mr. Patrol Officer Terrell.

2. As Mr. Terrell has reported, he was sent down to reinforce the detachment at ERAVE. As he is proceeding on leave on the 20th he was withdrawn and a MENDI Patrol under command of Mr. Patrol Officer Ford is temporarily taking his place. Mr. Cadet Patrol Officer Hattersby will leave Kutubu in sufficient time to arrive at ERAVE before Mr. Ford leaves there.

3. Mr. Terrell was sent down to ERAVE with instructions to move to the SAU area and protect the life and property of Her Majesty's subjects living in these villages along the line SAU/ ERAVE. In addition he was instructed to carry out a census check of the villages of MABIKI and SAU which were not complete. It has been found in this Sub-District that the taking of census at the appropriate time is a first class measure of native administration. In this present instance two aspects were in mind; should anyone be murdered, reasonable evidence is available that such an individual did exist after reference to the village census book, and again when labour is required for Public work it is possible to readily assess the potential.

4. At the moment there are two problems which have to be born in mind constantly, in constructing the ERAVE airstrip. Labour for work on the strip and food for feeding that labour. The second problem has now been overcome by means of airdrops. However now that food is available it is necessary for a European officer to personally recruit labour. This was done by Mr. Terrell.

However from reading the report and its appendices it will be seen that instructions were issued from your Headquarters that Mr. Terrell and the O.I.C. Mr. Brand were to remain on the ERAVE station. Mr. Terrell was at ERAVE at the time and this instruction was passed to him through Mr. Brand the same day as it was received at LAKE KUTUBU. I would remark here that Mr. Brand is of course directly in charge of all activities within the area embraced by his post, which has been quite clearly laid down. On the 11th January, the District Commissioner, Southern Highlands arrived at Erave on a tour of inspection. At that time the radio link between Lake Kutubu and Erave was broken, and Erave only received a replacement set on the 25th January. While the D.C. was at Erave the question of labour to work on the strip was referred to him and he instructed Mr. Terrell to proceed to MABIKI and SAU to recruit that labour.

5. Since that date, instructions have again been given to me on two occasions by your Headquarters that two officers must be present continuously on the Erave strip. This in effect means that we will be unable to recruit and maintain sufficient labour to complete this strip by June as the natives subject to the jurisdiction of this post consist of three categories. The first could be roughly described as those natives who belong to the

SAMBERIGI, LANGURI and TSIMBERIGI tribes. These are cowardly sly creatures, who require the personal attention of a European officer before they will do anything they do not wish to do. The second category include the natives of the four villages in the vicinity of ERAVE, who are under complete control but still require direction. The remainder are all those people living to the north of the Erave River. These too are friendly but nervous, and although some have been and are working on airfield construction, require to be personally escorted to and from their villages by a European officer. It can be taken then that while this instruction stands, the only two alternatives are to post a third officer to Erave for the purpose of recruiting labour, or to import approximately 100 labourers from the TARI Sub-District.

Neither of these alternatives are particularly attractive as the maintenance of a European officer in the field involves a considerable strain on lines of communication, even though he lives modestly, while in the case of imported labour the upkeep of these is naturally more expensive since they are not in their own environment. I would firmly recommend to you that the best solution would be that Messrs. Brand and Batterby be posted to Erave, that Mr. Brand be allowed to leave that post whenever he wished for periods no longer than two weeks, on the understanding that such short patrols were undertaken to secure labour to work on airstrip construction.

6. One further aspect of the administration of the Erave post should be dealt with in this memorandum. At the moment I am under instructions to remain at Lake Kutubu, so that I can readily supervise, and advise your Headquarters of, the various activities that are going on in this Sub-District. This will mean that I am unable to supervise the movement of stores along the Kutubu/Erave L. of C. As can be readily understood a considerable volume of supplies is being moved through the whole time to Erave, since everything except rice is routed that way. The great bulk is carried by volunteers, who quite naturally require constant supervision and organisation by European officials. In the past this has been done by myself or other officers stationed at Kutubu and visiting Erave. However this does not seem to be practicable within the next four months at least. Could one of the newly arrived Cadets be posted to Lake Kutubu? When I was in Moresby recently, the Director did suggest this to me but I declined the offer then as I did not consider him necessary along the lines I was planning. Now however I am left with very little initiative in the dispositions of staff until June when it is hoped that light aircraft will be landing at Erave, and the position will be eased somewhat. With a cadet at Kutubu I should be able, provided nothing was happening at the time and I advised you first, to carry out short patrols of a weeks duration around Lake Kutubu, which would enable me of course to carry out the necessary supervision of stores movements.

7. Action has been taken to ensure that in future the patrol post and airstrip will be referred to as Erave, and not Foré. Could the Dept. of Civil Aviation be advised to this effect please.

8. I have instructed Mr. Terrell to present his report with my covering letter to Mr. Foldi personally, so that any aspects requiring amplification can immediately be dealt with. Mr. Terrell is familiar with my views.

.....
E. D. WREN
Asst. District Officer

c/c: D.C. S.H.D.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Special Patrol Report LAKE KUTUBU No. 4-52/54

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS DISTRICT

CONDUCTED BY.....C.E.T. TERRELL, Patrol Officer.

AREA PATROLLED.....BRAVE Patrol Post and SAMBRIGI Valley.

PATROL PERSONNEL.....Europeans
C.E.T. Terrell, G.I.C.

Natives
R.P. & N.G.C. - 7
Carriers - 15 as required.

DURATION.....19th December 1953 to 11th February 1954.
35 days.

OBJECTIVES.....(1) Reinforcement of Bravo P.P.
(11) To assist that Office in the maintenance of Law and Order in the area under Government control.
(111) To assist in building 2000 airstrip.

MAP REFERENCE.....Sketch map of Patrol 10 of 52/53.

ATTACHMENTS.....Appendix "A" - Report on Police.
Appendix "B" - Correspondence pertaining to patrol.
Appendix "C" - Map.

E. Terrell

.....
C.E.T. Terrell
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

12th February, 1954.

INTRODUCTION

This patrol originated as the result of a report received from the O.I.C. BRAVE Patrol Post, informing the A.D.O. Kutubu of a serious outbreak of tribal fighting in the SAMBERIGI Basin to the east of FORE. This information was relayed to D.D.S. Headquarters (Appendix "B" contains copies of all correspondence relevant to this patrol), and in a radio conversation with Mr. E.D. Iron, Mr. J.N. Foldi gave instructions that I was to proceed to Fore to reinforce Mr. Brand.

When the patrol departed from Kutubu on the 10th December, 1953, it had as its immediate objective the policing of the SAMBERIGI area, which was to be done after a short halt at FORE. However, on the 20th December instructions were received from Headquarters, relayed through Kutubu, obliging me to remain at Fore in company with Mr. Brand. The situation remained at this juncture until 11th January, 1954, when Mr. G.W. Toogood, D.O., S.H.D. arrived in the course of a District tour. By this time the whole area was quiet, and the situation was explained to the District Commissioner, particularly regarding labour it was wished to employ on airstrip construction at Fore. Mr. Toogood then instructed me to proceed with the patrol into the Samberigi. Due to a break-down in radio communications, I was not able to advise the A.D.O. Kutubu immediately of this decision. Rumors eventually got through after I had left Fore.

While in the Samberigi, it became apparent to me that no main interest was being taken in the affairs of the Yamborigi, and I was informed that the IANBURIs further east were not particularly concerned either. I checked the census of the area (the analysis of which will be included in the final edition of Kutubu Patrol Report No. 10 of 52/53), and organised labour for work on the strip, remaining there about a fortnight. The area was perfectly quiet, though a large number of men were away trading at KAINI across from Kihari.

This report will consist of a diary and section on Native Affairs. All other matters will be dealt with in Mr. Brand's report, as they are not peculiar to this patrol, and have no bearing on its objectives, which were principally to give physical support to the Brave Patrol Post, and assist in airstrip construction.

DIARY

Saturday 19th December, 1953.

TAGE to KESEKE

No. 1

The patrol got off to a late start, due to a shortage of canoes, following their dispersal when a man-hunt set out the day before yesterday to apprehend an escaped prisoner; for the same reason my police escort was one N.C.O., the remaining police necessary to be picked up en route. I arrived an hour ahead of the bulk of the party at KESEKE, and by the time they arrived, it was too late to start through to the Mabi, so camp was made at the end of the lake.

Full rations issued.

Travelling time 4hrs. 30mins.

Sunday 20th December, 1953.

KESEKE to BAURUTAGE

No. 2

Timetable

Dep. KESEKE	0730
At SESESE (Mabi Riv.)	1045-1005
Arr. HEGISO	1845
Arr. BAURUTAGE	1900

Travelling time: 4hrs. 5 mins.

In all, some 80 loads were being carried by the patrol, mostly supplies for Fore, and the limited labour I had, had to make two trips to get it through to the Mabi. They took an inordinately long time

but eventually the last of the loads arrived, and the Buris who had been brought specifically for this job were sent back to the station, while the patrol moved on down to Baurutage, helped on its way by Mabi natives that interpreter BAIKI had been sent through to brief earlier. Camp was made, and Baiki was treated for pneumonia which he had contracted after leaving Entaba. As it was too late to buy food, once again rations were issued. The party at this stage consisted of one policeman, an interpreter, and 15 carriers. Village labour will be collected tomorrow to carry through the remainder of the loads.

Monday 21st December, 1959

BAURUTAGE to SUMBURU

No.3

Timetable

Dep. BAURUTAGE	0745
At. HEGISO	0825-0935
At OKOKANA U.P. Mission	1130-1210
Arr. HARBUKU	1300
At KOKIABO	1300-1325
Arr. SUMBURU	1830

Travelling times 3hrs. 5mins

Sending all cargo and personnel on ahead of me in Baurutage canoes, to move through to Kokiabo and wait me there, I moved upstream to Hegiso, where I purchased sage previously ordered. This was then loaded onto canoes, and with all available men, was sent in the wake of the patrol party. Stopping again briefly at HEBU to recruit more carriers, I moved slowly down stream hearing everyone else ahead of me. They are all past masters of dilatoriness. I stopped for an hour or so at the Mission establishment at Okokana where I was the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Donaldson, and after a most undignified farewell during which my canoe capsized and I had an unskilful swim, I moved on down to the canoe landing near Harabain where we disembarked and continued overland to the MASHI River. Here I found three more police who were promptly attached to the party, and we moved through to Kokiabo where I found everyone waiting. The available carriers did not quite go round, and six bags of rice had to be left behind to be brought through by these people tomorrow. Everyone set off, and we got through to Sumburu in quite good time.

Part of the party was fed on sage which had been left here by earlier parties, while the rest were given rice. No food was purchased.

Tuesday 22nd December, 1959.

SUMBURU to No.1 Camp

No.4

Timetable

Dep. SUMBURU	1230
Arr. No.1 Camp	1845

Walking times 5 hrs 40mins

With the exception of a few patrol carriers, everyone was sent off at 0730, the escorting police being told to camp at No.1. I remained behind to await the arrival of the rice that was left at Kokiabo yesterday, and when it arrived put it all into drums which were waiting here for that purpose. The carriers were not sufficient to get it all through, and over a dozen drums were left at Sumburu. On arrival at camp, I found that the remainder of the party had only just beaten me in. A large number of men have colds and temperatures, and no one was very well. Sift down with a temp. of 104° when I got into camp. Probably 'flu.

Rice issued to everyone.

Wednesday 23rd December, 1959.

No.1 to No.2 Camp

No.5

Timetable

Dep. No.1	0735
At TESHORO	1235-1240
Arr. No.2	1315

Walking times 3hrs 55 mins

Sent everyone ahead of me again, and I plodded along painfully trying to keep the stragglers up. The patrol had the aspect of the

Retreat from Moscow at this stage, with sick (or lazy) carriers spread along beside their loads all up the track. Managed to keep some semblance of order in the rabble until I came across a load that somebody had dumped and fled. As everyone with me was loaded to the plimsol line, I carried the load the last couple of hours, and arrived in camp feeling murderous. My fond illusion that everyone was ahead of me was swiftly shattered on learning that about half the carriers had dumped off the side of the road complete with loads to rest when they felt like it. A number of men were legitimately sick; the rest were just plain lazy. It was to those that I directed remarks to the effect that if anyone arrived behind the official rear-guard in future, they would not get an option.

Medical attention was given to those asking for it. Myself in such the same condition as earlier.

Orders issued.

Thursday 24th December, 1953

No.2 Camp to FURE

No.6

Timetable

Dep. No.2
Arr. FURE

0730
1330

Walking times thru Skine.

Once again I sent everyone on ahead of me, but this time I left a police rearguard, and gradually overtook everyone. I arrived about an hour ahead of the patrol, and when they arrived they were all stood down. There were several more cases of real sickness, and all were given treatment. Discussions with Mr. Brand followed while I slowly recuperated.

Friday 25th December, 1953 - Saturday 16th Jan, 1954

FURE

No.7-80

This period was spent at Fure. On the 20th December all Mabi village natives were sent home, and the Kutabe carriers were also returned to that station, as soon as they were well enough. On December 30th instructions were received cancelling my plan of moving into the Samborigi, and I did what I could to assist Mr. Brand in getting work on the strip under way with a rather larger labour line which it was possible to feed with the stores I brought through. Advice was received that an airdrop had been arranged for the end of January, and it was desired to further increase the strength of the labour force. This presented problems when we were unable to go out and recruit the labour required. On January 11th, a patrol led by Mr. D.C. Trogard arrived, and instructions were received to proceed with the Samborigi patrol. Since no repercussions had occurred there over the Tainewigi fighting, the primary purposes of this patrol were census compilation and recruitment of labour. On January 3rd the ATBA transmitter went U/S, and at the time of my leaving Fure, our only communications were by means of runner.

Sunday 17th January, 1954.

FURE to SAMMILLI

No.3)

Timetable

Dep. FURE
Arr. MBBERI Riv.
Arr. KUSAI'IGIBU
Arr. SAMMILLI

0725
0800
1120-1240
1220

Walking times thru Skine.

Using a small line of Fure labourers, the patrol moved through to Sammilli, where camp was made, and the carriers were sent back. Word was left at Kusai'igibu that I would be returning tomorrow to check the census and organise volunteers for work at Fure. Similar warnings given the Sammillis.

Plenty of food was quickly bought for the very small patrol party. Salt and beads in most demand.

Monday & Tuesday 18th & 19th January 1954

SAMILLI

Nos. 31-32

On Monday I moved through to Kusa'i'ogibu, where a nearly full census was checked, and eligible men were divided into two lines, each to work on a week on week off basis at Fore. On my return to Samilli the same procedure was carried out. All five Samilli hamlets were checked during the day. While dealing with the Samillis, mail runners arrived from Kutubu, via Fore, accompanied by three new police. It was these people's non-arrival that delayed the patrol's departure from Fore.

The weekly labour quota was despatched on Tuesday, two police accompanying them to Kusa'i'ogibu, to make sure there was no mix-up. V/C IANE of Samilli escorted the party right through.

More than enough food was always available, the women being most insistent that I should buy. I was pleasantly surprised by the attitude of the women who were far more friendly and bold than I had been led to believe.

Wednesday 20th January, 1954.

SAMILLI to PAUHARI

No. 33

Timetable

Dep. Samilli	0700
Arr. NEARUZI	0730
At KAGIAME	0735-0810
Arr. PAUHARI	0835
	<u>Walking times 1hr. 40mins.</u>

Using Samilli carriers, the patrol moved on to PAUHARI, a hamlet in the middle of the MASIKI group. It was necessary to relay some of the stores as there were only seven men available. Word was sent out to all the MASIKI hamlets that I would be checking the census, and a start was made at Pauhari. A number of absences were noted, most of the allegedly trading with natives in the Kikori area. This may or may not be so.

Male food again available.

Thursday 21st to Sunday 24th January, 1954.

PAUHARI

Nos. 34-37

During this period all hamlets in the Masiki group were visited, and a number of absences were again reported. Labour organised on the same lines as Samilli was sent through to Fore, when WANAMARA was visited the first time only two men were in residence. Asked where everyone else was, I was told they were away trading. When the party was leaving the village I was told by the two boys who had run through to tell of the patrol's coming, that four men had run away on the morning of the patrol's arrival, after having been told specifically that their presence was required for the census. As a result of this the village was visited again by myself two days later, though without results. During the course of the second visit an accusation was made against Const. AREA that he had raped a native woman. The matter was thoroughly investigated, and insufficient evidence came to light to lay a charge. Area's story was corroborated by Const. GIMI who was with him at the time.

Eighteenth 25th January, 1954.

PAUHARI to SAU

No. 38

Timetable

Dep. PAUHARI	1135
Arr. POPWALAGAI	1230
Arr. SAU	1255
	<u>Walking times 1hr. 20mins.</u>

L/Cpl. AVAIMERE was sent through to Sau to pick up men to carry the patrol through to that village, and when they arrived we moved straight off. Word was left at POPWALAGAI that its census would be checked tomorrow, and camp was made above Sau Village. Due to the absence of most of the people in their gardens, the census was postponed till the morrow.

Tuesday 20th January to ~~Monday~~ 29th January 1944

SAU

No. 33-43

The five ~~new~~ hamlets were censused during this period, and the labour recruits sent through to Fore. Once again a large number of men were away, but in this case I should say that most of the claims were genuine. Previously I had accepted the trading excuse with reservations. It was also noted that the full permissible labour recruitment in this area has taken place, with up to 83% of the labour potential away working in Kihari and Moresby. During my stay at San three of four pneumonia cases were treated, apparently satisfactorily, as well as several minor complaints. Two disputes over pigs were settled amicably, and one alleged indecent assault case was heard but not proceeded with.

While visiting ~~one~~ hamlet, just above San, the Catalina flew over on its way to drop at Fore.

There was never any shortage of food, and I ended up with more than we could use.

Sunday 31st January, 1944.

SAU to FORE

No. 44

Timetable

Dep. SAU	0825
Arr. FAUHARI	0940
At. KAHIANI	1030-1040
At. SAMBILI	1140-1205
Cross HIRIRI Cr.	1250-1325
Arr. FORE	1735

Walking time: Thurs. 30mins.

The second line of men to work at Fore, relieving those sent earlier, were used as patrol carriers. Some time was spent rounding them up in the morning, which delayed our start somewhat. The patrol walked steadily all day, with brief halts on the way to allow stragglers to catch up. The relief lines from Mas-iki and Sambili were also collected en route. We were held up crossing the Hiriri Cr., crossed just after the descent from the HIRIRIRU Sange, by flood waters which had completely submerged the normal bridge.

Party stood down on return to Fore.

Monday 1st February to Sunday 7th February 1944.

FORE

No. 45-51

Radio contact was not made with Hutaba until the 3rd, when Mr. Wren advised that a line of carriers had been despatched the day before. These were to be used by myself on my return journey. They duly arrived on Saturday afternoon, and final preparations for departure were made on Sunday. All surplus food and trade I had, I left with Mr. Brand, reducing my party to the barest minimum.

Monday 8th February, 1944

FORE to Bush Camp

No. 52

Timetable

Dep. FORE	0940
At. No. 2 (KOPARE)	1100-1155
At. TESSHO	1300-1355
Arr. Camp (ASUMAI)	1505

Walking time: Thurs. 50mins.

Getting away to a good start, the patrol walked well, getting through to a camp just before No. 1. I had intended to go right through, but a certain amount of drugging appeared, and it was not essential that I make it. A much better effort than the down-ward journey.

Rice issued to all hands - the only swag I had with me.

Tuesday 9th February, 1954.

Bush Camp to SUMBURU

No. 53

Timetable

Dep. ARUMAI	0700
At. No. 1 Camp	0815-0830
Arr. SUMBURU	1300
	<u>Walking time: 5 hrs. 15 mins.</u>

The patrol again walked well, though once again the trail dragged a bit. On arrival at Sumburu, the village Head man was approached, and told he would be required to give evidence in the murder case originating at Sumburu. He was very much against the proposal, and pleaded to be left out of it. He even offered a pig to avoid going to Kutabu, but after a deal of persuasive talk he eventually realised there was no way out, and became used to the idea. It was due to this that I remained at Sumburu instead of going on to NARADUTU.

Some trouble buying enough food to go round. Apparently these people were being quite honest when they said they were very short. It is odd because they have not been called on to supply anything to the parties going through. Eventually enough came in.

Wednesday 10th February, 1954.

SUMBURU to TUNURU

No. 54

Timetable

Dep. SUMBURU	0650
At. TOMENI	0815-0830
At. MUYIADU	0830-0855
Cross Mabi Riv.	1040-1100
At. ORCHANA	1310-1515
Arr. TUNURU	1605
	<u>Walking time: 8 hrs. 50 mins.</u>

Two police were left at Sumburu to await the arrival of a line of carriers due to come through in the next day or two, and take them through to Fore. This line was later passed, they being in canoe, while the patrol walked up the banks of the Mabi. Const. INGITA and interpreter SANGA were given charge of the Head man. He obviously wasn't up to keeping with the patrol, and Ingita, who is an old friend of his, was told to bring him through in his own time. One carrier who was sick last night held up the tail of the patrol, but everyone else got through in good time. Delays occurred in crossing the two rivers, but these are unavoidable, while I detoured to visit the mission, the patrol moved straight through to Tunuru, where I found camp already made when I arrived. Much better progress so far; shades of the downward journey.

Food enough to feed a battalion bought for small trade, and I had to turn away as much as we bought.

Thursday 11th February, 1954.

TUNURU to TAGE

No. 55

Timetable

Dep. TUNURU	0655
At. ISA (FINAGE)	0820-0845
At. SORIANA	1045-1105
At. KENE	1300-1315
Arr. TAGE	1540
	<u>Walking time: 7 hrs 0 mins.</u>

A mix up over canoes held up the patrol at Sankia for some time, and it wasn't till dark that the body of the patrol arrived. I went ahead, stopping at Kene to send canoes back, and then moving straight through to TAGE, where I reported to Mr. Wren. When the patrol got in it was fed and stood down.

END OF DIARY

NATIVE AFFAIRS.

Though the principal factor in the despatch of this patrol was the outbreak of fighting in the TSIMBERIGI Basin, this patrol had no opportunity of investigating the cause and effects, and no other information is available, save Mr. Brand's original report.

Without a proper investigation it is not possible to say just what caused the fighting, but for what they are worth, I will put forward my opinions which coincide with Mr. Brand's.

In the first instance it appears that a dispute occurred between TEMOGAPARA, and SUNANI and other TSIMBERIGI villages, after the pattern of innumerable other disputes in this area. Blood pressure rose on both sides, and though both had been warned that the Administration disapproved of fighting 'in toto', decided that this was probably the last opportunity they would get for a free for all before the post at BRAVE was in a position to implement the "stop-fighting" ban. When a Temogapara man was killed by a number of WAROs and MARAROGOs, and a pay back killing followed, it was taken as the signal for the Tsimberigi as a whole to fall on the village and virtually massacre the inhabitants. There was probably an element of curiosity in the decision to fight, prompting the people to find out just how far they could go, and by the apparent lack of interest shown so far by the Administration, they may feel they have nothing to worry about after all.

Some concern was felt that this attitude would extend into the Sa-berigi and Fure area, but fortunately it has not. I am sure that at no time has any group thought at all seriously of attacking the post at Fure, and the idea of a Sa-berigi attacking a Government patrol is paradoxical.

Though WARO was involved in the fighting, the IANURU area as a whole was not. The latter have been involved in a private brawl of their own with the folk to the south of Mt. Murray, and they may have been provoked. That fighting too has not been investigated fully, though I understand that Kibori has taken some action.

As far as the Sa-berigi and Fure valley people are concerned, they seem to be accepting Governmental rulings with a fairly good grace. About 100 natives from the two areas are now working at Fure on a semi-permanent standing, and 50 more are working voluntarily, roughly on a week on week off basis. During my absence in the Sa-berigi, a line of IANURUs arrived, and some of them are working too. Their arrival seems to have been prompted by the older men of the community, who think the Government might be superfluous in their area, particularly when chasing murderers, and as a result decided that these men should act as community scavengers.

The census check made by this patrol was not wholly satisfactory. A rather better showing was achieved than in the first attempt, but large numbers of absentees appeared, all reputedly away on trading expeditions. What people there were, were all co-operative after a fashion, and this is the only area I have struck in the Southern Highlands when women have outnumbered men in the line ups.

In conclusion I would say that it is regrettable that it has not been possible to take any stringent action in dealing with the Tsimberigi population. The lax attitude displayed is singularly galling at the best of times, and it comes very hard from people who will almost certainly be over the hills and far away when a Government boot first steps into their country.

.....
C. E. F. Terrell.
Patrol Officer

Laka Kutaba, S.H.D.

14th February, 1964.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Special Patrol Report
No. 4 of 19/54

APPENDIX "A"

Report on Police Personnel accompanying.

No. 2017 L/Col. AVAIMEE 15 days.

This man was borrowed from Brave Patrol Post for the duration of the Sumberigi patrol. Performed his duties satisfactorily, though is not exceptional. A good steady worker.

No. 1695 Const. ABARE 55 days.

From Fore to Kutubu. Satisfactory on the whole with a tendency to big-headedness.

No. 7787 Const. GIMI 55 days

Much improved but still not special. Is becoming quite reliable.

No. 7202 Const. AREA 55 days

Does his work, but no more if he can help it. Is shifty, and the episode mentioned in this report blots his copy-book a second time with a similar case. Might improve somewhere else.

No. 8044 Const. SIBUVA 55 days

Conduct and ability fair. Will never be more than mediocre.

No. 738 Const. SIBIYI 55 days

A new member of the Kutubu detachment. Not very bright, but is keen to do a good job. Will improve with experience.

No. 7299 Const. BEBIA 24 days

This man and the other two noted below joined the patrol at SAMILLI. Will improve in time, but seems rather slow witted. Conduct good.

No. 7093 Const. FOKO 24 days

Probably the most promising of the new police. Is intelligent and when he settles down will be more confident to use his initiative.

No. 6326 Const. ANDAKITHA 24 days

Has had previous experience in patrolling, but appeared almost out of his depth. Conduct fair.

.....
C.E.F. Ferrill
Patrol Officer

Lake Kutubu, S.N.D.

14th February, 1954.

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Federal Report 4-52/54 - LAKE HURON

RADIOGRAM

No. 24

Prefix No.	Office of Origin	Words	Time
24	HONSBY	44/48	30/1001

DISTRICT
FUTURE

DESP. FOUR 100/14-3/50 UPDATED REFERS STOP AS INSTRUCTED BY RADIO FROM
CONVOYATION 1504. VIBELL. MUST REPEAT MUST REMAIN FOUR WITH HEAD STOP
ALL EFFORTS TO BE DIRECTED TOWARDS COMPLETING AIRSTRIP AFTER WHICH
PACIFICATION OF DISTURBED AREA MAY BE ATTEMPTED

SERVICES

Date Stamp 33.12.1000/1100

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

DS14/1/61

15th Dec, 1953

The Government Secretary,
PORT MORESBY

Reported Fighting - Sanberigi Valley

Further to signal from Kutubu, minuted to you this day, I have had Radio Telephone conversation with the Officer in Charge Kutubu, Mr. E.D.Wren, at 11 o'clock today. The following instructions were passed.

1. Patrol Officer Terrell with sufficient Police to bring BRAVE strength to 15, to proceed immediately to Brave Patrol Post.
2. No attempt to be made to stop fighting or apprehend the killers at this stage, but careful record to be made of any information which may come into the Patrol Post.
3. Brand and Terrell both to remain on the Brave Station and concentrate on the work of getting the airfield ready for light aircraft.
4. In view of the reported state of unrest, Officers mentioned to take every precaution to ensure against any possibility of a surprise attack against BRAVE station or any of the personnel based there.
5. Report that portable Radio Transmitter batteries are run down is acknowledged and every endeavour will be made to forward two sets of batteries by first transport.
6. Wren to submit a full and detailed report by first transport out of Kutubu.
7. Wren advised that another Officer will be found to undertake the Wendi/Brave Australasian Petroleum Company escort duty but that Wren still held responsible for assembling of carriers and the preparation of Police equipment etc. as if he were doing the job himself.
8. Consideration will be given at the appropriate time to the advisability of doubling the Patrol Officer escort which will accompany the A.P.C. Geological Survey operating in the Sanberigi and eastwards to the Sirohi River.

Wren advised to watch the situation carefully and keep this Headquarters posted on any further developments which may occur.

It is not considered that the situation, as reported today, should in any way interfere with the plans of the A.P.C. Geological Survey of the Sanberigi Valley, as the party will be operating in this particular area until well on towards the end of February.

(Sgd.) A.A.R. per J.S.H.
(A.A.Roberts)
Director, PNGMA.

Copy to: Assistant District Officer
Lake Kutubu

DS14/1/61

Confirming our radio conversation this day.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

COPW ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

106/14-1/53

Sub-District Office,
TAGE,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

The Director,
District Services and Native Affairs,
PORT MORESBY

FIGHTING - TEMBERUIGI VALLEY

Please find attached a report by the Officer-in-charge of the BRAVE Patrol Post dealing with the outbreak of violence which I report to you briefly in my radiogram KUT02.

I have attached a map with the villages concerned underlined in ink for your convenience. TEMOGAPARA Village is not shown, but is, I believe some two to three miles to the east of SUMANI Village - one of the villages concerned in the fighting.

Mr. Patrol Officer Terrell has been instructed to move to SAU Village with police and remain there. This will ensure that fighting does not spread to the line SAU-WASIKI-SAWMILLI-FORE. The danger being that these people may attempt one last fling before they can be dealt with. An attempt of this nature was stopped before.

When I was at FORE recently I warned these villages concerned in this present fighting I would not tolerate fighting south of the BRAVE River. However as things stand I hope to move to Fore after the New Year and if this report is correct I shall insist on the maximum possible compensation payments being made. This of course, will hurt greatly.

In conclusion, I feel that until a few of these people are hung they will not be persuaded to cease their brutal killings. They are sneak killers and cowards.

For your information please.

(Sgd.) E.D. WREN
(E.D. Wren)
s/Asst. District Officer

c/c. D.C., S.H.D.
S.I.C., Brave P/P.

COPY ONLY

Appendix "B" of Patrol Report 4-53/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

7/31-1/53

GRAVE Patrol Post,
FORE,
via LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

19th December, 1953.

The Assistant District Officer,
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.

FIGHTING - TSIMBERIGI VALLEY

On the 1st December a man from SUMANI Village in the TSIMBERIGI Valley reported that two men had been killed at TEMOGAPARA, also in the TSIMBERIGI Valley, a few days previously. From this and later reports, I learned that the following had taken place.

One morning at the end of November HOUSE, WABOBAHABEHI, FARABU'IU, BERE, and SAGAMANDE, from the village of MAROROGO and WARO in the eastern SAMBERIGI Valley went to TEMOGAPARA Village, on the southern side of the TSIMBERIGI Valley, to reconstrate with SUREU of TEMOGAPARA, who, they said, had been having illicit relations with LEMBERINIU, the wife of WABOBAHABEHI. During the ensuing argument SUREU was killed and the MAROROGO and WARO men then left. IOGEA, SUREU's elder brother, who was in another part of the village at the time, heard of this and pursued the killers. He almost caught up to them and fired several arrows, but did not hit anyone. He was then struck in the left shoulder by a spear thrown by SAGAMANDE and the MAROROGO and WARO men were joined by friends who had been in hiding along the track. The attackers then moved off, and IOGEA returned to TEMOGAPARA.

That afternoon, while the villagers were gathered round a platform on which SUREU's body had been placed, two SUMANI men, MURURIA and FAI'IA, who had been to visit the KERABI Valley area, came up the track to TEMOGAPARA on their way home. They had heard the wailing, and when they came close they asked who had died, and were told that SUREU had died of an illness. When they approached to see for themselves MURURIA was struck down by axes wielded by TOREBA and EYENDA, both of TEMOGAPARA. His companion, FAI'IA was allowed to go free as the TEMOGAPARAS said they only wished to avenge themselves for the killing of SUREU - I was told that MURURIA belonged to the same clan, SOBOKERA, as several of the men responsible for SUREU's death.

Several days later men from the villages of WARO, BESAFERU, and MAROROGO in the eastern SAMBERIGI Valley and SUMANI in the TSIMBERIGI, all fully armed, moved up to TEMOGAPARA village. They were met by TEMOGAPARA men and the ensuing fight lasted for two days, during which numerous men from both sides sustained arrow wounds but no one was killed.

Early next morning the attacking parties closed all the tracks from TEMOGAPARA and when it became light enough, they closed in on the village. The inhabitants panicked and there was a mad rush as they attempted to escape from the trap. IOGEA, who told me this part of the story, said that he had crawled into the undergrowth near his house and run into the bush. Late in the afternoon, when there was no one about, he crept back into the village. He said that the women's houses had been burnt down and he saw numerous bodies lying around, and identified the following.

WARAWA	(m/a)		KUMBIAME	(f/o)	
YHEINZU	(f/a)	- wife of WARAWA	ARE	(m/o)	- son of KUMBIAME
LOBIAME	(f/a)		IBINIU	(f/o)	- daughter of KUMBIAME
AWANE	(f/a)		BOGORAME	(f/o)	- " " " "
TAU	(m/o)	- son of AWANE			

According to IOGEA these people died as a result of axe wounds. There was no one else in the village, all the survivors presumably being in hiding in the bush.

Another TENGAPARA man, WEN'IARI, arrived here on the 14th December and told me of further killings. His story is as follows:-

"When TENGAPARA was surrounded I escaped into the bush and went to WARIMADU Village, on the southern bank of the Erave River, and contacted a female relative who brought food to me while I hid in the bush near the village. One morning I heard a lot of noise coming from the direction of the village and shortly afterwards my relative came to my hiding place and told me that two TENGAPARA women and three children, who had been sheltering there had just been killed. I knew that I would also be killed if I was seen so when it grew dark I left my hiding place and came here."

The V/C's of SUMANI and HERABURU also reported in on the 14th December and the V/C Sumani said that he had heard rumours of the murder of the five women and children. According to him they were killed in retaliation for SOI, a WARIMADU man, who had been killed when a party of TENGAPARA men found him alone in his garden. Apart from this, the V/C was not able, or willing, to give any further information. He did not want to come in in the first place but was talked into coming by the V/C of HERABURU, NATANI, who had been sent by the head man of the LANGURI area in order to see that their fair name was not harmed by rumours. I think that the V/C of SUMANI was implicated in the killings, and in fact he was accused of murdering a woman when TENGAPARA was surrounded, but stoutly denied the accusation. Then, when he was returning from here to his village, he allegedly threatened to kill IOGUA of TENGAPARA, who made the accusation.

It seems at least sixteen people have been murdered and I think that probably more have not the same fate as it is rumoured that parties of men from WARD, MARWOGG, and SUMANI are hunting for the TENGAPARA survivors in the bush. As you will realize it is difficult to obtain precise information on these murders from here and for this reason this report is rather sketchy. A real appreciation of the situation could only be obtained on the spot but I doubt whether the bodies of the slain TENGAPARAS will be seen when a patrol eventually goes into the area as apart from the fact that they probably still practice cannibalism I doubt that the killers would be stupid enough to leave such incriminating evidence.

(Sgd.) W.J.Brand
(W.J.Brand)

021.C. ERAVE Patrol Post.

COPY ONLY

Annex "B" of Patrol Report 4-22/54 - LAKE KUTUBU

RADIOGRAM

Words 120
Charge 50/0
Time 14/2000

No. 17

URGENT
SERVICES
MORNING

KUTUBU OIC BRAVE ADVISES SERIOUS OUTBREAK TRIBAL FIGHTING TUBERIKI
AREA WITH 15 DEATHS REPORTED IN LAST WEEK STOP TUBERIKI VILLAGE HAS
LOST 14 KILLED STOP BRAVE PERSONNEL SUFFERING FROM FEA AND OIC NOT IN
POSITION TO TAKE NECESSARY ACTION STOP SEVERAL DIFFERENT GROUPS INVOLVED
AND IF ACTION NOT TAKEN IMMEDIATELY BY APPRECIATION IS THAT FIGHTING
CAN BE EXTENDED IN WHOLE SANDERIKI AREA STOP THESE PEOPLE DEFINITELY
FORBIDDEN TO FIGHT BY KIROBI AND KUTUBU PATROLS AUGUST 1953 STOP DENIED
SEND ALL AVAILABLE POLICE KIROBIAN OFFICERS STOP HELP SUFFERING FROM
SIMILAR HIGH TEMPERATURE SINCE REFUSE TO FIGHT STOP OIC STOP BRAVE HAVING
SERIES DEATHS FELT TIAL LOUVE INTELA NYUM LOING PICIV DFDCH LAIRA MUCU
KUTUBU NYUM BRAVE

DISTRICT

Date/Time Sent 14.12.53/1525



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of the Southern Highlands Report No. 5 of 53/54

Patrol Conducted by E.D. WREN a/Assistant District Officer.

Area Patrolled: KUTUBU - ERAVE Line of Communication

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans Nil

Natives Various

Duration—From 12 / 4 / 1954 to 13 / 5 / 19 54

Number of Days 32

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services - Feb / 1954

Medical 7 / 8 / 19 50

Map Reference District Map

Objects of Patrol (1) Inspection of ERAVE Patrol Post
(2) Inspection of KUTUBU - ERAVE Line of Communication

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please, direct.
Copy to D.C. Mendi

27 / 5/19 54

E.D. Wren
a/Assistant District Officer.

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation £ Nil

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund £ Nil

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund £ Nil

24/6
Stairs
Le
Revised

30-13-60

18th June, 1954

Assistant District Officer,
LAKE KUTUBU
Southern Highlands District

Patrol Report LAKE KUTUBU No. 5/53-54.

The Report submitted by Mr. E. D. Wren, Assistant District Officer, after his routine inspection of Erave Patrol Post and the line of communication between Lake Kutubu station and that Post, is acknowledged.

CONCERN Although the statement attributed to IABUSI may be just idle chatter, as you intend, all precautions should be taken, carrier lines should have an adequate escort and be told to keep together when passing through the SUGURU area.

The tentative date for the next ERAVE rice drop is June 30th. It is not by any means easy to charter the Catalina aircraft, as it is always in great demand and especially by the Australian Petroleum Company. A period of unserviceability can cause much inconvenience.

Your visit to Erave Patrol Post has served a useful purpose, enabling as it did an examination of the road link between IALIBU and ERAVE, and the continuity of steady progress on the airfield for light aircraft.

A.A. Roberts
(A. A. Roberts),
Director, DDC&NA.

note
Mura
25/6/54

30/15/60

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

Patrol Report LAKE KUTUBU No. S-36/54.

SOUTHERN HIGHLAND DISTRICT.

CONDUCTED BY..... E.D. WREN, a/A.D.O.

AREA PATROLLED..... KUTUBU- BRAVE Line of Communication.

DURATION..... 12th April to 13th May 1954.
32 days.

OBJECTIVES..... (1) Inspection of BRAVE Patrol Post.
(11) Inspection of KUTUBU- BRAVE Line of Communication

MAP REFERENCE..... District.

ATTACHMENTS..... Appendix "A" - Report on Police



[Signature]
.....
E.D. WREN
a/Assistant District Officer.

Lake Kutubu, S.H.D.

PATROL DIARY.

Monday, 12th April, 1951

Moved by large single government canoe from the Government Station at TAGE to KESEKE landing at the S.E. end of the lake. Disembarked and moved by land to the SEGEME landing point on the MUBI River. En route passed L/Cpl. PETOTO and party returning from this latter place after having dumped ERAVE stores there. Loaded stores and party on village canoes that had been left there by HEGISO Village on instructions. Travelled down the MUBI River to IFIGI Village, where the party stayed for the night. A.D.O. visited the U.F. Mission station at OROKANA.

Tuesday, 13th April,

By canoe to KOKIAPU Village. Const. MAUE dropped off en route at HARABU'IU landing to move overland to KOKIAPU and to collect Village Constables from IFIGI, DOGABARI and HARABU'IU plus sufficient village people to lift ERAVE stores to SUMBURU. These arrived and patrol moved to SUMBURU. On arrival the ERAVE carrier line was found in occupation.

Wednesday, 14th April - Friday 16th April,

Combined parties moved to ERAVE Patrol Post, staying at Nos. 1 and 2 camps and arriving ERAVE at noon on the third day after an easy trip.

(A.D.O. then took over ERAVE Patrol Post and Mr. Brand moved to IALIBU Patrol Post and back. During this period anything of interest will appear in the ERAVE Quarterly Report).

Friday, 7th May,

Patrol left ERAVE with all Kutuba police and labour that had been on loan to that station. Reached No. 2 camp at noon where party stayed the night. Late in the afternoon joined by a party of KERI folk who were trading with villages across the ERAVE. These stayed the night with the patrol. Much calling back and forth across the river with each suggesting the other should cross to their side to trade.

Saturday, 8th May,

Moved to Camp No. 1.

Sunday, 9th May,

Moved to SUMBURU. Some inhabitants there and all seemed very friendly. A number of them treated for sores on the legs and fever. The head man was found to be suffering from the latter complaint and has since recovered. The projected feast was found to still be at least two months away though preparation were in train for it. (Progress for this particular celebration is being followed with interest since general talk has it that escaped from custody alleged murder IABUSI of SUMBURU will then attempt to kill a Kutubu constable and carrier. This will be reported on in the main body of the report.) Camped here for the night.

Monday, 10th May,

To IFIGI. En route medical treatment given at the two IOMESI Villages and KOKIAPU. Most men away trading in Wagi land and across the ERAVE. However women and children there in good numbers. Food purchased.

On arrival HARABU'IU found Village Constable GEWA had elected to go bush after he had received instructions to meet A.D.O. at that village. Camped here the night and instructions left with villagers that GEWA was to report to KUTUBU.

Tuesday, 11th May,

To IFIGI. A.D.O. stayed at the U.F. Mission station with party at IFIGI Men's House.

Wednesday, 12th May,

To HEGISO. Arrangements made to move ERAVE stores to that place. Camped here for the night.

Thursday, 13th May, 1954

To Station. Met at KESEKE landing by Mr. Patrol Officer Ford with canoes.

End of Diary.

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report No. 5 of 53/54

1. INTRODUCTION.

This patrol in itself was quite uneventful, and indeed hardly calls for any written report. It was undertaken as a routine inspection of the ERAVE Patrol Post, and of the KUTUBU - ERAVE Line of Communication.

At ERAVE progress is steady and with food being dropped, completion of a light aircraft strip is now in sight. If the three drops of rice that have been called for are delivered then that should be sufficient to enable the job to be finished.

The presence of the Kutubu patrol at ERAVE enabled Mr. Patrol Officer Brand to take a party through to IALIBU and back. This was undertaken to obtain local knowledge from the Kutubu end of the population and terrain in between. No difficulty will be experienced when the time is appropriate in passing runners between the two places.

2. NATIVE AFFAIRS.

These are satisfactory with the exception of the SUMBURU area. Apart from these three hamlets and one, an hour out from ERAVE, the population passed through are all speakers of the FOI'I or Kutubuan language. These people numbering some 2,600 all told (along with the NAMO group) have proved to be ideal in temperament, and social organization for the tasks they are at present being called upon to undertake. They are an essentially obedient people and allocation of duties among them, in the FOI'I tube is for the Villages of HEGISO, SAURUTAGE, FERIBU, HARABU'IU and KOKIAPU to supply carriers to move stores to ERAVE, while other villages work on the Kutubu airfield for varying periods as they are called up. These duties are on a voluntary basis being part of the local self help scheme.

The visit by the patrol to those villages concerned with the carriage of stores shewed that no great strain was being imposed upon them though Village Constable GEMA complains that his community do not respond readily when called upon to carry. However a request that he be allowed to retire was refused. The more so after his failure to meet the A.D.O. at his village. He is a good constable and now in a better state of mind again.

The SUMBURU and IOMESI Villages give only limited help in carrying. The latter village is also responsible for the care of stores in transit. To date they have been very good at this duty. It is probable that SUMBURU came some 10 - 15 years ago from the NORTH side of the ERAVE River, being driven out by fighting from their homes. They now live on IOMESI land. IOMESI have strong links with the WAGI River people and have that same sly approach. It will be difficult to make this latter community conform since they can always depart to relatives in the WAGI. It is to be hoped that the search for an aerodrome in the general KIVIVI area has not been given up as hopeless as a post here would speed up control of the lower WAGI, and NEMBI Rivers, as well as that portion of the ERAVE population in the vicinity of KIVIVI. The IOMESI group are a marginal people from that general locality.

Relations between ourselves and the people of SUMBURU have had two unfortunate upsets. The arrest of one IABUSI for alleged murder and his subsequent escape, and an allegation of the rape of one or two SUMBURU women by a policeman. As far as the later incident was concerned it was not possible to proceed against the constable since witnesses would not come to Kutubu to give evidence. Repeated attempts were made to have them come in and when these failed the policeman was moved to MORESBY with a request that he be dismissed. Regarding the escaped murderer he is now reported to be at his village - SUMBURU and is again reported to have stated that after the feast there is over he will kill a policeman and labourer. The feast is some two months away. This may be talk but the danger is that it might not be and carrier lines could be ambushed going through. Precautions have been taken and attempts are now being made to find his whereabouts.

However the patrol was received well both at SUMBURU and IOMESI. The stories current may be from the WAGI element and if possible any full dress efforts to recapture him will be delayed until after the opening of the ERAVE airstrip.

More mundane affairs include the fact that HARABU'IU Village were celebrating the opening of their new men's house and the patrol passed through and that IFIGI Village are in the process of rebuilding theirs.

3. VILLAGE CONSTABLES.

A few matters of interest could be recorded under this heading. Both the new constables from HERIBU and DOGABARI were carrying out their duties satisfactorily. GEWA of HARABU'IU may resign if he still so desires when the first aircraft lands at ERAVE. BAIKI of IFIGI should be dismissed if he steps out of line once again. BAURUTAGE Constable has permission to stay on his property on the MUBI River behind the Government Station for an indefinite period.

The principal land holder from KOKIAPU Village is at present at Kutubu in government employment. When he is fluent in "Police Motuan" he will return to his village and a recommendation will be forwarded for his appointment as constable there. This should strengthen control towards SUMBURU as the village is half WAGI speaking.

4. ROADS AND BRIDGES.

The track between Kutubu and ERAVE is in a satisfactory state for European campers.

5. REST HOUSES.

These are situated at BAURUTAGE, IFIGI, and SUMBURU. Between there and ERAVE a number of camps have been built.

6. HEALTH.

During the writers stay at ERAVE an average of 30 were no duty. This was rather high proportion but was caused to some degree by the very bad weather. At that stage also there was no native medical orderly on duty. However one has since been posted there.

Treatment was given at the various villages passed through for minor complaints and one case was brought to Kutubu and evacuated to KIKORI for treatment. He appeared to be suffering from a bone complaint.

It was noted that people from the villages of DOGABARI, IFIGI and ERAHUGU are now making more use of the OKOKANA Mission Health facilities. Also an infant welfare centre has now been started there with good results.

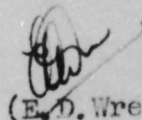
7. EDUCATION.

What educational facilities that are provided at all for these people are given by the OKOKANA Mission station. At the moment some progress is being made but students tend to attend for a term, or two terms, then miss a term. This in itself does not matter since the school is still in the formative stage. It was noted though that the age of the students was rather high.

Later it will be preferable to have say the 6 - 10 age group attending the Mission school and then any who can should proceed to the Government school at Kutubu station. At the present rate of progress students will be married before they complete their 4 year course at the mission school.

This is no criticism of the mission activities since they would welcome an instruction from this office that children were to attend their school. Once however things are more settled in the sub - district, having in mind that there is only one mission interested in the area this matter should be placed on a more regular basis.

No new ground was covered by this patrol and so therefore the route of the patrol can be followed from a copy of map from Patrol Report No 10 of 52/53, which is attached to the original of this report.



(E. D. Wren)

s/Assistant District Officer.

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No. 5 of 53/54

A.P.P.E.N.D.I.X "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No. 8351 Const. MAUE

32 days.

Conduct and dependability fair. Tends to assume to know more than in fact he does, nevertheless a local man and quite reliable in this district when his limitations are realised.

No. 7252 Const. AREA

7 days.

Conduct and ability good.

No. 7358 Const. GIWIYI

7 days

Conduct good. Seems a very negative personality One of the latest draft into Kutubu and it is believed he does not intend to re-engage when he finishes this on years term. If this is correct he would be no loss.

No. 7093 Const. POKU - PAGAI.

7 days

This man has not had long at Kutubu but has had some years service and will probably prove to be a very valuable member of the detachment.

No. 6326 Const. ENDANIPA.

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7307 Const. LILIGAU

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7448 Const. KENAI BARITA

7 days.

Conduct and ability good.

No. 7753 Const. JARADA

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7095 Const. SENGIJO HARUTA

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

.....
(E. D. Wren)
a/Assistant District Officer.

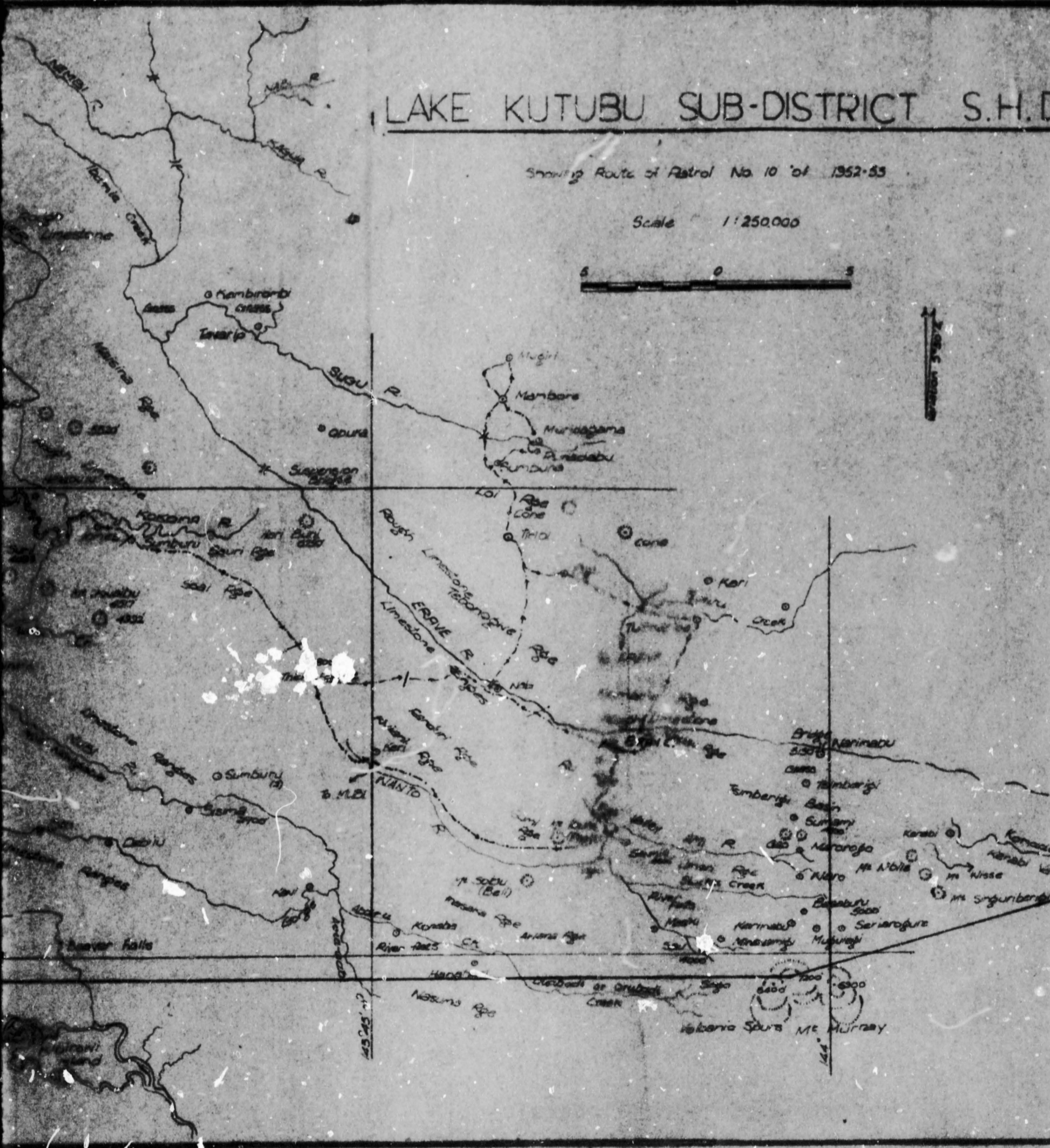
27th May, 1954.

Lake Kutubu S.H.D.

LAKE KUTUBU SUB-DISTRICT S.H.D.

Showing Route of Patrol No 10 of 1952-53

Scale 1:250,000



SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS
LAKE KUTUBU

No. 5 of 53/54

By: E.D.Wren a/ADO

To: KUTUBU - ERAVE line of communication

8
7
6

30

16
38
:0
1

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA.

Patrol Report LAKE KITUBU No. 5-55/54.

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS DISTRICT.

CONDUCTED BY..... E.D.WREN, s/A.D.O

AREA PATROLLED..... KITUBU- ERAVE Line of
Communication.

DURATION..... 12th April to 13th May 1954.
32 Days.

OBJECTIVES..... (1) Inspection of ERAVE Patrol
Post.
(11) Inspection of KITUBU-
ERAVE Line of Communication

MAP REFERENCE..... District.

ATTACHMENTS..... Appendix "A" - Report on Police

.....
E.D.WREN
s/Assistant District Officer.

Lake Kituba, S.H.D.

PATROL DIARY.

Monday, 12th April, 1954

Moved by large single government canoe from the Government Station at TAGE to ESEKE landing at the S.E. end of the lake. Disembarked and moved by land to the SEEME landing point on the MUBI River. En route passed L/Cpl. PETOTO and party returning from this latter place after having dumped ERAVE stores there. Loaded stores and party on village canoes that had been left there by HEGISO Village on instructions. Travelled down the MUBI River to IFIGI Village, where the party stayed for the night. A.D.O. visited the U.P. Mission station at OROKANA.

Tuesday, 13th April,

By canoe to KOKIAPU Village. Const. MAUE dropped off en route at HARABU'IU landing to move overland to KOKIAPU and to collect Village Constables from IFIGI, DOGABARI and HARABU'IU plus sufficient village people to lift ERAVE stores to SUMBURU. These arrived and patrol moved to SUMBURU. On arrival the ERAVE carrier line was found in occupation.

Wednesday, 14th April - Friday 16th April,

Combined parties moved to ERAVE Patrol Post, staying at Nos. 1 and 2 camps and arriving ERAVE at noon on the third day after an easy trip.

(A.D.O. then took over ERAVE Patrol Post and Mr. Brand moved to IALIBU Patrol Post and back. During this period anything of interest will appear in the ERAVE Quarterly Report).

Friday, 7th May,

Patrol left ERAVE with all Kutubu police and labour that had been on loan to that station. Reached No. 2 camp at noon where party stayed the night. Late in the afternoon joined by a party of KERI folk who were trading with villages across the ERAVE. These stayed the night with the patrol. Much calling back and forth across the river with each suggesting the other should cross to their side to trade.

Saturday, 8th May,

Moved to Camp No. 1.

Sunday, 9th May,

Moved to SUMBURU. Some inhabitants there and all seemed very friendly. A number of them treated for sores on the legs and fever. The head man was found to be suffering from the latter complaint and has since recovered. The projected feast was found to still be at least two months away though preparation were in train for it. (Progress for this particular celebration is being followed with interest since general talk has it that escaped from custody alleged murder IABUSI of SUMBURU will then attempt to kill a Kutubu constable and carrier. This will be reported on in the main body of the report.) Camped here for the night.

Monday, 10th May,

To IFIGI. En route medical treatment given at the two IOMESI Villages and KOKIAPU. Most men away trading in Wagi land and across the ERAVE. However women and children there in good numbers. Food purchased.

On arrival HARABU'IU found Village Constable GEWA had elected to go bush after he had received instructions to meet A.D.O. at that village. Camped here the night and instructions left with villagers that GEWA was to report to KUTUBU.

Tuesday, 11th May,

To IFIGI. A.D.O. stayed at the U.F. Mission station with party at IFIGI Men's House.

Wednesday, 12th May,

To HESISO. Arrangements made to move ERAVE stores to that place. Camped here for the night.

Thursday, 13th May, 1954

To Station. Met at KESSEKE landing by Mr. Patrol Officer Ford with canoes.

End of Diary.

S
F,
S

30,

19
3E
30
3

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report No. 5 of 53/54

1. INTRODUCTION.

This patrol in itself was quite uneventful, and indeed hardly calls for any written report. It was undertaken as a routine inspection of the ERAVE Patrol Post, and of the KUTUBU - ERAVE Line of Communication.

At ERAVE progress is steady and with food being dropped, completion of a light aircraft strip is now in sight. If the three drops of rice that have been called for are delivered then that should be sufficient to enable the job to be finished.

The presence of the Kutubu patrol at ERAVE enabled Mr. Patrol Officer Brand to take a party through to LALIBU and back. This was undertaken to obtain local knowledge from the Kutubu end of the population and terrain in between. No difficulty will be experienced when the time is appropriate in passing runners between the two places.

2. NATIVE AFFAIRS.

These are satisfactory with the exception of the SUMBURU area. Apart from these three hamlets and one, an hour out from ERAVE, the population passed through are all speakers of the FOI'I or Kutubuan language. These people numbering some 2,600 all told (along with the NANO group) have proved to be ideal in temperament, and social organization for the tasks they are at present being called upon to undertake. They are an essentially obedient people and allocation of duties among them, in the FOI'I tube is for the Villages of HEGISO, BAURUTAGA, HERIBU, HARABU'IU and KOKIAPU to supply carriers to move stores to ERAVE, while other villages work on the Kutubu airfield for varying periods as they are called up. These duties are on a voluntary basis being part of the local self help scheme.

The visit by the patrol to those villages concerned with the carriage of stores shewed that no great strain was being imposed upon them though Village Constable GEWA complains that his community do not respond readily when called upon to carry. However a request that he be allowed to retire was refused. The more so after his failure to meet the A.D.O. at his village. He is a good constable and now in a better state of mind again.

The SUMBURU and IOMESI Villages give only limited help in carrying. The latter village is also responsible for the care of stores in transit. To date they have been very good at this duty. It is probable that SUMBURU came some 10 - 15 years ago from the NORTH side of the ERAVE River, being driven out by fighting from their homes. They now live on IOMESI land. IOMESI have strong links with the WAGI River people and have that same sly approach. It will be difficult to make this latter community conform since they can always depart to relatives in the WAGI. It is to be hoped that the search for an aerodrome in the general KIVIVI area has not been given up as hopeless as a post here would speed up control of the lower WAGI, and NEMBI Rivers, as well as that portion of the ERAVE population in the vicinity of KIVIVI. The IOMESI group are a marginal people from that general locality.

Relations between ourselves and the people of SUMBURU have had two unfortunate upsets. The arrest of one IABUSI for alleged murder and his subsequent escape, and an allegation of the rape of one or two SUMBURU women by a policeman. As far as the latest incident was concerned it was not possible to proceed against the constable since witnesses would not come to Kutubu to give evidence. Repeated attempts were made to have them come in and when these failed the policeman was moved to MORESBY with a request that he be dismissed. Regarding the escaped murderer he is now reported to be at his village - SUMBURU and is again reported to have stated that after the feast there is over he will kill a policeman and labourer. The feast is some two months away. This may be talk but the danger is that it might not be and carrier lines could be ambushed going through. Precautions have been taken and attempts are now being made to find his whereabouts.

However the patrol was received well both at SUMBURU and IONESI. The stores current may be from the WAGI element and if possible any full dress efforts to recapture him will be delayed until after the opening of the ERAVE airstrip.

More mundane affairs include the fact that HARABU'IU Village were celebrating the opening of their new men's house and the patrol passed through and that IFIGI Village are in the process of rebuilding theirs.

3. VILLAGE CONSTABLES.

A few matters of interest could be recorded under this heading. Both the new constables from HERIEBU and DOGABARI were carrying out their duties satisfactorily. GEWA of HARABU'IU may resign if he still so desires when the first aircraft lands at ERAVE. PAIKI of IFIGI should be dismissed if he steps out of line once again. BAURUTAGE Constable has permission to stay on his property on the MUBI River behind the Government Station for an indefinite period.

The principal land holder from KOKIAPU Village is at present at Kutubu in government employment. When he is fluent in "Police Motuan" he will return to his village and a recommendation will be forwarded for his appointment as constable there. This should strengthen control towards SUMBURU as the village is half WAGI speaking.

4. ROADS AND BRIDGES.

The track between Kutubu and ERAVE is in a satisfactory state for European campers.

5. REST HOUSES.

These are situated at BAURUTAGE, IFIGI, and SUMBURU. Between there and ERAVE a number of camps have been built.

6. HEALTH.

During the writers stay at ERAVE an average of 30 were no duty. This was rather high proportion but was caused to some degree by the very bad weather. At that stage also there was no native medical orderly on duty. However one has since been posted there.

Treatment was given at the various villages passed through for minor complaints and one case was brought to Kutubu and evacuated to KIKORI for treatment. He appeared to be suffering from a bone complaint.

It was noted that people from the villages of DOGABARI, IFIGI and ERAHUGU are now making more use of the OKOKANA Mission Health facilities. Also an infant welfare centre has now been started there with good results.

7. EDUCATION.

What educational facilities that are provided at all for these people are given by the OKOKANA Mission station. At the moment some progress is being made but students tend to attend for a term, or two terms, then miss a term. This in itself does not matter since the school is still in the formative stage. It was noted though that the age of the students was rather high.

Later it will be preferable to have say the 6 - 10 age group attending the Mission school and then any who can should proceed to the Government school at Kutubu station. At the present rate of progress students will be married before they complete their 4 year course at the mission school.

This is no criticism of the mission activities since they would welcome an instruction from this office that children were to attend their school. Once however things are more settled in the sub - district, having in mind that there is only one mission interested in the area this matter should be placed on a more regular basis.

No new ground was covered by this patrol and so therefore the route of the patrol can be followed from a copy of map from Patrol Report No 10 of 52/53, which is attached to the original of this report.



(E. D. Wren)
a/Assistant District Officer.

e
r
e
se
16
18
10

TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

Lake Kutubu Patrol Report
No. 6 of 63/64

A.P.P.E.N.D.I.X "A"

Report on Police Personnel.

No. 6351 Const. MAWE

32 days.

Conduct and dependability fair. Tends to assume to know more than in fact he does, nevertheless a local man and quite reliable in this district when his limitations are realised.

No. 7252 Const. AREA

7 days.

Conduct and ability good.

No. 7359 Const. GIWIYI

7 days

Conduct good. Seems a very negative personality One of the latest draft into Kutubu and it is believed he does not intend to re-engage when he finishes this on years term. If this is correct he would be no loss.

No. 7093 Const. FOKU - PAGAL.

7 days

This man has not had long at Kutubu but has had some years service and will probably prove to be a very valuable member of the detachment.

No. 6826 Const. HINDAHIPA.

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7307 Const. LILIGAU

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7448 Const. KINAI BARITA

7 days.

Conduct and ability good.

No. 7753 Const. JARADA

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

No. 7095 Const. SENGISO HARUTA

7 days.

One of the latest draft and appears to be a good policeman.

.....
(E. D. Wren)
a/Assistant District Officer.

27th May, 1964.

Lake Kutubu S.H.D.

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS

LAKE KUTUBU

No: 10 of 53/54

By: W.J. Brand

To: MUBI, KOKOMA River, FORE, SUGU River

10
11
12

PATROL DIARY

Thursday 1st October to Sunday 18th October, 1953.

During this period the axis of the strip was swung to a bearing of 287° 30' to provide better approaches. A start was then made on the removal of the soft top soil on this new alignment, the earth obtained being used as filling for the depression at the 650 yard mark.

Mr. A. D. O. Wren, accompanied by the Rev. C. V. Robb arrived at FORE on the 4th October and after spending a week here Mr. Robb returned to KUTUBU with returning police and carriers.

Sunday 18th October to Saturday 24th October, 1953.

During this period Mr. PFO. Brand undertook a short trip to the Upper SUGU River while Mr. A. D. O. Wren remained on the station. All available personnel employed on clearing grass on the new strip alignment.

SUGU River Patrol Diary:

Sunday, 18th October 1953.

FORE to TIRIBI.

Departed camp at 7 am. after dissuading large numbers of local natives who wished to accompany the patrol. Followed the L. of C. to KUTUBU as far as the deserted village of WALA on the southern bank of the ERAVE. Descended to the river and crossed on a dilapidated suspension bridge at 10.30. Left the ERAVE and followed a rough track to the North, gradually ascending TEBONOGWE Range, the summit of which was reached at 2 pm. An excellent view was obtained, and I was take compass bearings on villages and features in the TSIMBERIGI and SAMBERIGI Valleys to the E. S. E. and S. E., the PADRI area to the East and the KOURU Valley to the N. E. Descended northern slopes of TEBONOGWE Range and entered grass country at 3 pm. Reached TIRIBI Hamlet at 4 pm. and made camp in torrential rain on site used by Mr. McLeod on his return trip to MENDI. The only inhabitant, an old man, told me that all the able bodied males were away fighting in the SUGU Valley and that all women were in hiding in the bush and gardens. The men returned at 5.30, and after secreting their weapons along the track, sidled past camp.

Unable to purchase food so rice issued. Guard mounted.

Walking time: 7 hours. Distance: 9 miles.

Monday, 19th October 1953.

TIRIBI.

Remained in camp TIRIBI.

Purchased sufficient food for 3-4 days from a large crowd of friendly men, women and children, and gave a short talk to the men. Also asked the leading man of TIRIBI - NANDIGA - to take care of the gear which I intend to leave here before leaving for the SUGU Valley tomorrow.

Guard mounted.

Tuesday, 20th October 1953.

TIRIBI to MAMBORE.

Deposited the excess gear and fresh food in the TIRIBI Mens' house and departed at 7 am. guided by 30 men and boys. North over an excellent track through PADRE Gap in the LOI Range and descended slightly through gardens to the SUGU River which was reached at 9 am. Our guides now numbered about 70, all unarmed and friendly, and they set to work to rect a bridge to replace the old one, which was cut down from the northern

side this morning. As the river is only 15 yards wide at this point, the bridge was soon completed and we crossed to the northern bank at 9.30 am. The local men immediately fell in at the rear of the patrol so after warning them against raiding any hamlets or gardens that we may pass through we moved on over undulating grass country, reaching MAMBORE ceremonial ground, where camp was made at 10.30. Our followers then sat down in a group along the track and exchanged glares across the camp site with 50 men who had come from hamlets to the S.E. I took advantage of their gathering I gave them a short talk followed by a rifle demonstration. This was regarded with genuine awe and the parties then dispersed.

As I had anticipated, no food was brought in and sweet potatoes carried from TIRIBI were issued.

AI'IU, the head of TIARAREBERA clan, on whose land we are camped assured me that food would be provided tomorrow, so I decided to remain here. Guard mounted.

Walking time: 2½ hours. Distance: 5 miles.

Wednesday, 21st October 1953.

MAMBORE.

With two local men as guides, Interpreter and 3 police, I left camp at 8 am. and climbed to MUGIRI - a hamlet at the head of the valley. Whilst moving up the valley we witnessed the evacuation of several small hamlets of the TIAREBERA clan. About 40 men, women and children were moving along a parallel spur 300 yards to the West, the women being loaded down under great loads of children and family possessions and shoeing their pigs before them. The men, all armed, brought up the rear. We shouted that our intentions that our intentions were friendly and the cry was taken up by men of MUGIRI, who were watching our approach, but the reassurances seemed only to spur them on. At MUGIRI we were met by a large number of men, sitting on the ceremonial ground between two low houses, each over a hundred yards long. We talked for a while and I then took bearings on other hamlets across the SUGU, perched on the steep slopes of the LOI Range to the South, and also onto Mts. GILUWE and IALIBU, to the North and North-east respectively. We then returned to camp down the western side of the valley, passing through several hamlets, receiving identical receptions at each.

The only women seen to date were those who fled this morning, the remainder being in hiding, with their children and pigs, in the long cane grass beside the track. In many cases they made their presence felt by erecting "Keep Out" notices on the tracks into their hiding places.

Arrived back at MAMBORE to find that the people seen fleeing were those who were to provide us with food. Headman AI'IU seemed genuinely ashamed of their action and after his repeated calls to other nearby hamlets sufficient food for one day was purchased with salt and beads. Guard mounted.

Thursday, 22nd October 1953.

MAMBORE to TIRIBI.

Broke camp at 6.30 and moved down to MURIDAGAM/ Hamlet, the scene of last Sunday's fighting, where we were met by men armed to defend themselves against possible repeat attacks. It seems that the fight started when men from this hamlet arrowed several men of PURADABU Hamlet in their gardens after an argument involving pigs. The PURADABUs called their allies from other hamlets south of the SUGU and crossed the river to retaliate. In the ensuing battle 7 MURIDAGAMA and 9 PURADABU men were wounded, none fatally, several houses were burnt and numerous banana palms were cut down.

We then waded across the SUGU, as the bridge here had also been cut down, to PURADABU, which is about 500 yards south of MURIDAGAMA. While looking for a crossing place here Interpreter TABE came across the decomposing body of a man, which had been washed up on the rocks. I was told that it was the body of a PADRI Man, who had been killed by men of LAVAREBA clan further upstream while he was visiting their area. Gave the usual talk to the few men who were waiting in the hamlet and then went on through SUMBURA, which is 2 miles W.S.W. of PURADABU.

From SUMBURA we rejoined the track to TIRIBI and arrived there at 11.45.

Turned away large quantities of food and issued the remainder of that purchased on Monday. Guard posted.

Walking time: 3½ hours. Distance: 7 miles.

Friday, 23rd October 1953.

TIRIBI to TURIKARIBE.

Despatched the FORE headmen, NANDABE and DOREBA, with a note to A.D.O. Wren telling him my E.T.A. FORE and departed TIRIBI at 6.30. After an easy walk over lightly forested spurs we arrived at PIGE. We were met by the 2 FORE Headmen, who had decided to come here to purchase a pig. These people are much less timid than those of the SUGU Valley and a large number of men, women and children greeted the patrol. I gave them a short talk, signed on 4 young men as labourers, and then proceeded in an easterly direction through alternate belts of grass and light forest to the site of one of Mr. McLeod's camps, where a spell was taken at 10.30. Continued east at 11 am. and shortly after reached a large garden where I waited for the patrol to close up. Just after passing the garden we surprised a man, his wife and two children who were coming along the track towards us. The two adults and the small boy took off leaving the small girl screaming on the track and our shouted reassurances fell on deaf ears as they crashed through the undergrowth. The small girl was placed in charge of the Interpreter and on climbing a grass spur we saw her mother running along the track some distance ahead, warning the inhabitants of TURIKARIBE Hamlet, half a mile to the East, to flee. The result was instantaneous, and when we arrived there at 12.15 they could be galloping over nearby spurs.

While camp was being erected the distraught father came to claim his daughter and by his actions it was apparent that he did not expect to see her alive again. After his fears his fears had been overcome he began calling to those who had fled and when a number of men gathered on top of a nearby spur he went to reassure them.

I gave orders that no-one was to leave camp and at 2 pm. the braver elements edged past into the village.

I assured them that we had come as friends and although at first they were obviously prepared to flee again they soon settled down. The headman of WARERE Hamlet - WAI'IU - who assisted Patrol No. 2 of 49/50, when all others fled, said that he had heard that we were at FORE and that his people were frightened that I would ally with the FOREs, their enemies, against them. He added that when Patrol No. 2 of 49/50 was at WARERE the TSIMBERIGIs who were acting as guides had killed a young WARERE man and concealed his body under rubbish in the mens house. The body was not discovered until after the departure of the TSIMBERIGIs and the patrol, when the people again took up residence there. They told me that they would be prepared to meet the Headmen from the FORE area with a view to patching up old quarrels if the latter accompanied a patrol to the area.

After this they departed to collect food, and sufficient for two meals was purchased with beads and small pieces of

calico and was augmented with rice. Guard posted.

Walking time: 4½ hours. Distance: 8½ miles.

Saturday, 24th October 1953.

TURIKARIBE to FORE.

Upon purchasing two small pigs for 1 pearl shell and a tomahawk we left TURIKARIBE and followed a track to the S.W. over grass spurs. Ascended KOMAME Range through treacherous limestone and spelled at the summit. Descended the southern slopes to the bridge over the ERAVE and while carriers were crossing I again inspected the oil seepages, which were found to be below the water line. The patrol then climbed the almost vertical northern slope of WASIAU Range to HANERI Hamlet and descended to camp at FORE arriving at 2.15.

Walking time: 5½ hours. Distance: 6½ miles.

.....

Sunday 25th October to 23rd November, 1953.

During this period all top soil along the new strip alignment as far as the 650 yard mark was removed.

Mr. P.O. Brand did a four day trip to SAWMILLI Village in the SAMBERIGI Valley to carry out the census and to recruit labour.

Diary of Patrol to SAWMILLI:

Monday, 26th October 1953.

FORE to SAWMILLI.

Departed camp at FORE at 11 am. and walked over a well defined track over slightly undulating, lightly timbered ground to the RU Range, the summit of which was reached at 1 pm. Descended to the right bank of the AMI River and after following downstream for a short distance ascended to KUSAI'IGIBU one of the SAWMILLI hamlets. Descended to and crossed the AMI River and climbed steeply to the camp site above SAWMILLI Village arriving at 4 pm.

Interpreter SOG had been sent ahead yesterday and consequently food and tent poles were waiting. Purchased sufficient food for 2 days with beads and salt.

Walking time: 4 hours. Distance: 7 miles.

Tuesday, 27th October 1953.

SAWMILLI.

Carried out the census of SAWMILLI and the hamlets of BUORIGI and JEREROMBI. The fall in was quite good, although they were, as usual, extremely boisterous. Several men and women were discovered fishing in the SISIKE Creek at the foot of the range as though in blissful ignorance of proceedings in the village.

Held discussions with the elders. They complained that men from the TSIMBERIGI had been poaching on their hunting grounds and had also cut down several sago palms. Signed on 8 labourers.

Issued the remainder of food purchased yesterday and purchased 58 bundles of tobacco with salt and razor blades.

Wednesday, 28th October 1953.

SAWMILLI to KUSAI'IGIBU.

Moved from SAWMILLI Village across the ANI River and up to KUSAI'IGIBU Hamlet where the census was carried out in an orderly manner. However, when the time came to census MAKOREARI Hamlet only 8 people were found to be present. Police were despatched for the remainder who could be seen sitting around the hamlet, which is about a mile south east of KUSAI'IGIBU. They soon arrived, led by an ex-labourer from Port Moresby who was resplendent in a white sun helmet with a red trade handkerchief as hat band, and long sleeved khaki shirt worn over a rami consisting of a mosquito net. After a pep talk the census was completed without further ado.

Eight more labourers were signed on and word was sent across to SAWMILLI warning the others to be prepared to accompany the patrol back to FORE tomorrow morning. They were also reminded to bring their week's food with them.

A good selection of food of excellent quality was bought and issued.

Thursday, 29th October 1953.

KUSAI'IGIBU to FORE.

Broke camp and then fell in the newly engaged labourers only to find that they had neglected to bring any food. By 10.30 am. they had gathered sufficient for a week and the patrol departed, on the same track as that used on Monday, arriving back at FORE at 2.15 pm.

.....

Tuesday 23rd November to Thursday 31st December, 1953.

During this period all timber within the strip lateral clearances was felled and the majority of the timber obstructing the western approach was also removed. An area of 2 1/2 acres was fenced and planted up with sweet potatoes.

Mr. P.O. Ford and Mr. M.A. Yelland from MENDI arrived here on the 25th November and departed again on the 26th November.

Mr. P.O. Brand returned from Lake KUTUBU on the 26th November with 640 lbs of rice and wheatmeal, which had been carried from KUTUBU.

Mr. A.D.O. Wren departed for Lake KUTUBU on the 1st December.

Acting on instructions from Headquarters Mr. P.O. Terrell arrived with police re-inforcements on the 24th December.

As the clearance of the heavy timber on the western approach. Most of this timber has now been cleared and an excellent view can be obtained along the line of approach over the S.W. Valley.

Work is now proceeding on the strip surface and all available labour is engaged earth to fill in a shallow gopher 100 yards from the eastern end. This is completed the remaining 250 yards of trench will be cleared and will be able to carry levelling operations.

REPAIRS

After a few days it was realized that a short patrol could be made to the area to the immediate north of the ANI River. The objects of this patrol were:

8
F,
e
30,
1g
3E
10
;

INTRODUCTION:

The rate of progress on the strip construction is slower than anticipated, due to the lack of food, both locally procurable and imported. Obviously the only way to surmount this difficulty, and get the strip into operation, is to arrange several airdrops of food. An initial drop of 6,000 lbs of rice would enable me to increase the labour force employed here to 100, which would mean a light aircraft strip could probably be completed within two months after the drop. Taking all factors into consideration, an airdrop of rice from Kikori should not prove any more expensive than the present highly unsatisfactory transportation overland from Kutuba. In the half-yearly estimates for January to June, 1954, 18,000 lbs of rice has been included, and this quantity will enable 100 labourers to be maintained for that period.

The visit by Mr. Wren, A.D.O., during October and November enabled me to carry out two short trips, one to the SUGU River area, north of the Krave, and the other to SANHILLI village in the SANBARIGI Valley. Both trips were without incident, and all objects were achieved. Then, as stocks of food were exhausted and we were unable to contact Kutuba by radio, the Kutuba receiver being U/S, I made a trip to collect necessary rice and wheatmeal.

Messrs. L. Ford, P/O, and L. Yelland, M/A, who were patrolling the area north of the Krave, paid a short visit at the beginning of October. Their visit was very welcome as it enabled us to make use of their experience in the field of airstrip construction, and Mr. Yelland was able to advise us on medical matters.

In accordance with instructions from Mr. Foldi, A.D.D S.; Mr. Terrell, P/O, with police reinforcements moved down here arriving on the 24th December. Nothing further has been heard from the TSIMBERIGI since the report (File No. 7/31-1/53) was forwarded.

AIRSTRIP CONSTRUCTION

At the beginning of October the axis of the strip was swung slightly, to a bearing of $277^{\circ} 30'$ to give a better approach from both ends. This realignment of the strip, being a matter of only 9 degrees, did not involve much extra work and the soft topsoil has now been removed for a distance of 650 yards from the eastern end.

Timber obstructing the side clearances was then felled and these are now complete. Work was then concentrated on the clearing of the heavy timber on the western approach. Most of this timber has now been cleared and an excellent view can be obtained along the line of approach down the ERAVE Valley.

Work is now proceeding on the strip surface and all available labour is employed carting earth to fill in a shallow depression 650 yards from the eastern end. Once this is completed the remaining 250 yards of topsoil will be removed and we will be able to begin levelling operations.

NATIVE SITUATION

After Mr. Wren's arrival here it was decided that a short patrol should be made to the area to the immediate north of the ERAVE River. The objects of this patrol were,

NATIVE LABOUR

The labour force has been steadily increased throughout the period to 59, consisting of 24 local men, 18 SAWMILLIS, 10 from the IEGIRA Valley, and 7 Kutubians. The local labourers are providing themselves with food and of the remainder, the only ones which I have been able to feed consistently for the entire three months have been the Kutubians. The SAWMILLIS went home each weekend for two months to collect food, and the men from the IEGIRA Valley enjoyed a spell in their villages throughout December owing to food stocks being exhausted here. Three hundred man days were lost during December due to illness - mainly 'flu - which practically all the labour contracted at some time during the month; a further 3 weeks was expended in collecting stores from SUMBURU.

From this it can be seen that the food shortage caused much time being spent on activities other than those directly concerned with airstrip construction.

HEALTH

Many cases of severe colds, which on occasion have developed into pneumonia have been experienced by patrol personnel, and several more from local villages have been treated at the Aid Post here. The same illness has been reported in various degrees of intensity in the SAMBERIGI and other adjacent areas, though the indications are that it is now on the wane. Two deaths have been reported to date. I have avoided using the term "influenza" in describing this outbreak, as it does not appear to be so virulent as the sickness recently experienced elsewhere in the Territory.

HONBI-FELELO, a local native, was gored by a bush pig recently and was subsequently evacuated to KIKORI for treatment. To date he has not returned.

WIRELESS COMMUNICATIONS

The AT4 Transceiver broke down during October when a fault developed and several transmitter valves were blown. The set was forwarded to the Supervising Technician (Radio) and a replacement set was received here on the 5th December. This Transceiver is working satisfactorily but due to bad weather conditions and the flat state of the old batteries contact with KUTUBU has been rather patchy. New batteries have recently been received.

STORES AND SUPPLIES

Except for some trade items which were not supplied on previous requisitions, and which have been re-indented for, all items from current half yearly requisitions have come to hand. Rice sufficient for approximately one month is held in the store and present trade stocks are adequate.

I am now able to buy a little fresh food from local villages. However, this source cannot be depended on as yet. Issues of rice are being augmented with a small quantity of food from station gardens.

Estimates for the next half year have been forwarded for approval.

POLICE

The present strength of the detachment is ten, consisting of 1 Corporal; 1 L/Cpl. and 8 Constables. In addition, 1 Sergeant, 1 Constable and the Const/Bug. are on leave.

As from the 1st November Cpl. IGAROBAL was promoted to the rank of Sergeant. L/Cpl. PETOTO and Const. AVAINERE were promoted Cpl. and L/Cpl. respectively early in December.

The standard of morale and work of the detachment remains high.

CENSUS

The census of SAWMILLI Village in the SAMBERIGI Valley was carried out on the 27th and 28th of October, 205 people being seen. This count, the third attempted, was treated a lot more seriously than previous efforts and the villagers have settled down really well since work here commenced.

As in the FOBE Valley, the birth place of all adults was noted. Unlike the FORB people, who came from near and far, nearly all the SAWMILLIs were born in the TUGI Valley area. Those who have migrated in, have all, with the exception of one man from the TIBURU Valley north of the ERAVE, come from villages in the immediate vicinity.

As compared with the remainder of the Sub-District, the average size of family is large. To some extent this may be attributed to the fact that the area has been the scene of much fighting in the past and also because adults seem to be more susceptible to the epidemics that strike periodically. The children orphaned by these conditions are then adopted by near relatives.

MAP

The original of the patrol map was returned by your Headquarters and a quantity of mapping paper has been received. Additional information has been added and the map goes forward with this report. Could the original be returned again, please, after the printing of copies.

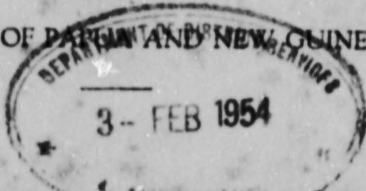
VILLAGE OFFICIALS

V.C. SEMERIGI of SAU paid his first visit here during October and had no trouble to report in his area. V.Cs. MENEBE of BOMAMI and NATABE of BESABURU arrived on the 14th December to report on the fighting in the TSIMBERIGI Valley. BOBORE of MASIKI and EBABIAPU of MAROROGO are the only Village Constables who have not paid a visit here since the patrol arrived.

.....*W. J. Brand*.....
W. J. Brand
C. I. C. ERAVE Patrol Post.



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA



PATROL REPORT

District of The Southern Highlands Report No. 10A 53/54 Lake Kutulau

Patrol Conducted by W. J. Brand, Patrol Officer

Area Patrolled M.V.B.I., KOKOMA RIVER, FORE, SUGU RIVER

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans —

Natives —

Duration—From 1/10/1953 to 31/12/1953

Number of Days 92

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services — / — / 19 —

Medical — / — / 19 —

Map Reference Sketch map attached

Objects of Patrol 1. Installation of Patrol Post & construction of airstrip at Fore. 2. Extension and consolidation of administration influence

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

*Copy to DC, Southern Highlands direct.
Forwarded, please.*

12 / 1 / 1954

W. J. Brand
District Officer
W. J. Brand
Patrol Officer

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation £ —

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund £ —

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund £ —

.....
.....
.....

1
MICR
F
D830-18-48

4th Feb 1954

The District Commissioner,
Southern Highlands District,
MENDI.

Patrol Report - No. 10,53/54 - W.J. Brand, P.O.

A copy of this Report was conveyed to this Headquarters by Mr. Wren who, while in Port Moresby, arranged for the sketch map to be printed as required.

The Report which describes the work carried out over three months in establishing the Patrol Post and aerodrome at Fore and the consolidation of Administration influence among the neighbouring native people, is indicative of the good work being carried out often in difficult circumstances, by Mr. Brand and fellow officers operating in this part of your District.

A.A.R. Roberts
(A.A.R. Roberts),
Director, D.D.S. & A.

→ c.c. ADO. Lake Kutubu

PA

PATROL DIARY

Thursday 1st October to Sunday 18th October, 1953.

During this period the axis of the strip was swung to a bearing of 287° 30' to provide better approaches. A start was then made on the removal of the soft top soil on this new alignment, the earth obtained being used as filling for the depression at the 650 yard mark.

Mr. A. D. O. Wren, accompanied by the Rev. C. V. Robb arrived at FORE on the 4th October and after spending a week here Mr. Robb returned to KUTUBU with returning police and carriers.

Sunday 18th October to Saturday 24th October, 1953.

During this period Mr. P. O. Brand undertook a short trip to the Upper SUGU River while Mr. A. D. O. Wren remained on the station. All available personnel employed on clearing grass on the new strip alignment.

SUGU River Patrol Diary:

Sunday, 18th October 1953.

FORE to TIRIBI.

Departed camp at 7 am. after dissuading large numbers of local natives who wished to accompany the patrol. Followed the L. of C. to KUTUBU as far as the deserted village of WALA on the southern bank of the ERAVE. Descended to the river and crossed on a dilapidated suspension bridge at 10.30. Left the ERAVE and followed a rough track to the North, gradually ascending TEBONOGWE Range, the summit of which was reached at 2 pm. An excellent view was obtained, and I was take compass bearings on villages and features in the TSIMBERIGI and SOMBRENGI Valleys to the E. S. E. and S. E., the PADRI area to the East and the KOURU Valley to the N. E. Descended northern slopes of TEBONOGWE Range and entered grass country at 3 pm. Reached TIRIBI Hamlet at 5 pm. and made camp in torrential rain on site used by Mr. McLeod on his return trip to MENDI. The only inhabitant, an old man, told me that all the able bodied males were away fighting in the SUGU Valley and that all women were in hiding in the bush and gardens. The men returned at 5.50, and after secreting their weapons along the track, sidled past camp.

Unable to purchase food so rice issued. Guard mounted.

Walking time: 7 hours. Distance: 9 miles.

Monday 19th October 1953.

TIRIBI.

Remained in camp TIRIBI.

Purchased sufficient food for 3-4 days from a large crowd of friendly men, women and children, and gave a short talk to the men. Also asked the leading man of TIRIBI - NANDIGA - to take care of the gear which I intend to leave here before leaving for the SUGU Valley tomorrow.

Guard mounted.

Tuesday, 20th October 1953.

TIRIBI to MAMBORE.

Deposited the excess gear and fresh food in the TIRIBI Mens' house and departed at 7 am. guided by 30 men and boys. North over an excellent track through PADRE Gap in the LOI Range and descended slightly through gardens to the SUGU River which was reached at 9 am. Our guides now numbered about 70, all unarmed and friendly, and they set to work to rect a bridge to replace the old one, which was cut down from the northern

side this morning. As the river is only 15 yards wide at this point, the bridge was soon completed and we crossed to the northern bank at 9.30 am. The local men immediately fell back at the rear of the patrol so after warning them against raiding any hamlets or gardens that we may pass through we moved on over undulating grass country, reaching MAMBORE ceremonial ground, where camp was made at 10.30. Our followers then sat down in a group along the track and exchanged glares across the camp site with 50 men who had come from hamlets to the S.E. I took advantage of their gathering I gave them a short talk followed by a rifle demonstration. This was regarded with genuine awe and the parties then dispersed.

As I had anticipated, no food was brought in and sweet potatoes carried from TIRIBI were issued.

AI'IU, the head of TIARAREBERA clan, on whose land we are camped assured me that food would be provided tomorrow, so I decided to remain here. Guard mounted.

Walking time: 2½ hours. Distance: 5 miles.

Wednesday, 21st October 1953.

MAMBORE.

With two local men as guides, Interpreter and 3 police, I left camp at 8 am. and climbed to MUGIRI - a hamlet at the head of the valley. Whilst moving up the valley we witnessed the evacuation of several small hamlets of the TIAREBERA clan. About 40 men, women and children were moving along a parallel spur 300 yards to the West, the women being loaded down under great loads of children and family possessions and shooing their pigs before them. The men, all armed, brought up the rear. We shouted that our intentions were friendly and the cry was taken up by men of MUGIRI, who were watching our approach, but the reassurances seemed only to spur them on. At MUGIRI we were met by a large number of men, sitting on the ceremonial ground between two low houses, each over a hundred yards long. We talked for a while and I then took bearings on other hamlets across the SUGU, perched on the steep slopes of the LOI Range to the South, and also onto Mts. GILUWE and IALIBU, to the North and North-east respectively. We then returned to camp down the western side of the valley, passing through several hamlets, receiving identical receptions at each.

The only women seen to date were those who fled this morning, the remainder being in hiding, with their children and pigs, in the long cane grass beside the track. In many cases they made their presence felt by erecting "Keep Out" notices on the tracks into their hiding places.

Arrived back at MAMBORE to find that the people seen fleeing were those who were to provide us with food. Headman AI'IU seemed genuinely ashamed of their action and after his repeated calls to other nearby hamlets sufficient food for one day was purchased with salt and beads. Guard mounted.

Thursday, 22nd October 1953.

MAMBORE to TIRIBI.

Broke camp at 6.30 and moved down to MURIDAGAMA Hamlet, the scene of last Sunday's fighting, where we were met by men armed to defend themselves against possible repeat attacks. It seems that the fight started when men from this hamlet arrowed several men of PURADABU Hamlet in their gardens after an argument involving pigs. The PURADABUs called their allies from other hamlets south of the SUGU and crossed the river to retaliate. In the ensuing battle 7 MURIDAGAMA and 9 PURADABU men were wounded, none fatally, several houses were burnt and numerous banana palms were cut down.

We then waded across the SUGU, as the bridge here had also been cut down, to PURADABU, which is about 500 yards south of MURIDAGAMA. While looking for a crossing place here Interpreter TABE came across the decomposing body of a man, which had been washed up on the rocks. I was told that it was the body of a PADRI Man, who had been killed by men of LAVAREBA clan further upstream while he was visiting their area. Gave the usual talk to the few men who were waiting in the hamlet and then went on through SUMBURA, which is 2 miles W. S. W. of PURADABU.

From SUMBURA we rejoined the track to TIRIBI and arrived there at 11.45.

Turned away large quantities of food and issued the remainder of that purchased on Monday. Guard posted.

Walking time: 3½ hours. Distance: 7 miles.

Friday, 23rd October 1953.

TIRIBI to TURIKARIBE.

Despatched the FORE headmen, NANDABE and DOREBA, with a note to A.D.C. Wren telling him my E.T.A. FORE and departed TIRIBI at 6.30. After an easy walk over lightly forested spurs we arrived at PIGI. We were met by the 2 FORE Headmen, who had decided to come here to purchase a pig. These people are much less timid than those of the SUGU Valley and a large number of men, women and children greeted the patrol. I gave them a short talk, signed on 4 young men as labourers, and then proceeded in an easterly direction through alternate belts of grass and light forest to the site of one of Mr. McLeod's camps, where a spell was taken at 10.30. Continued east at 11 am. and shortly after reached a large garden where I waited for the patrol to close up. Just after passing the garden we surprised a man, his wife and two children who were coming along the track towards us. The two adults and the small boy took off leaving the small girl screaming on the track and our shouted reassurances fell on deaf ears as they crashed through the undergrowth. The small girl was placed in charge of the Interpreter and on climbing a grass spur we saw her mother running along the track some distance ahead, warning the inhabitants of TURIKARIBE Hamlet, half a mile to the East, to flee. The result was instantaneous, and when we arrived there at 12.15 they could be galloping over nearby spurs.

While camp was being erected the distraught father came to claim his daughter and by his actions it was apparent that he did not expect to see her alive again. After his fears his fears had been overcome he began calling to those who had fled and when a number of men gathered on top of a nearby spur he went to reassure them.

I gave orders that no-one was to leave camp and at 2 pm. the braver elements edged past into the village.

I assured them that we had come as friends and although at first they were obviously prepared to flee again they soon settled down. The headman of WARERE Hamlet - WAI'IU - who assisted Patrol No. 2 of 49/50, when all others fled, said that he had heard that we were at FORE and that his people were frightened that I would ally with the FOREs, their enemies, against them. He added that when Patrol No. 2 of 49/50 was at WARERE the TSIMBERIGIs who were acting as guides had killed a young WARERE man and concealed his body under rubbish in the mens' house. The body was not discovered until after the departure of the TSIMBERIGIs and the patrol, when the people again took up residence there. They told me that they would be prepared to meet the Headmen from the FORE area with a view to patching up old quarrels if the latter accompanied a patrol to the area.

After this they departed to collect food, and sufficient for two meals was purchased with beads and small pieces of

calico and was augmented with rice. Guard posted.

Walking time: 4½ hours. Distance: 8½ miles.

Saturday, 24th October 1953.

TURIKARIBE to FORE.

Upon purchasing two small pigs for 1 pearl shell and a tomahawk we left TURIKARIBE and followed a track to the S.W. over grass spurs. Ascended KOMAME Range through treacherous limestone and spilled at the summit. Descended the southern slopes to the bridge over the ERAVE and while carriers were crossing I again inspected the oil seepages, which were found to be below the water line. The patrol then climbed the almost vertical northern slope of WASIAU Range to HANERI Hamlet and descended to camp at FORE arriving at 2.15.

Walking time: 5½ hours. Distance: 6½ miles.

.....

Sunday 25th October to 23rd November, 1953.

During this period all top soil along the new strip alignment as far as the 650 yard mark was removed.

Mr. P.O. Brand did a four day trip to SAWMILLI Village in the SAMBERIGI Valley to carry out the census and to recruit labour.

Diary of Patrol to SAWMILLI:

Monday, 26th October 1953.

FORE to SAWMILLI.

Departed camp at FORE at 11 am. and walked over a well defined track over slightly undulating, lightly timbered ground to the RU Range, the summit of which was reached at 1 pm. Descended to the right bank of the AMI River and after following downstream for a short distance ascended to KUSAI'IEGIBU one of the SAWMILLI hamlets. Descended to and crossed the AMI River and climbed steeply to the camp site above SAWMILLI Village arriving at 4 pm.

Interpreter SOG had been sent ahead yesterday and consequently food and tent poles were waiting. Purchased sufficient food for 2 days with beads and salt.

Walking time: 4 hours. Distance: 7 miles.

Tuesday, 27th October 1953.

SAWMILLI.

Carried out the census of SAWMILLI and the hamlets of BUCREGI and SEREROMBI. The fall in was quite good, although they were, as usual, extremely boisterous. Several men and women were discovered fishing in the SISIKE Creek at the foot of the range as though in blissful ignorance of proceedings in the village.

Held discussions with the elders. They complained that men from the TSIMBERIGI had been poaching on their hunting grounds and had also cut down several sago palms. Signed on 8 labourers.

Issued the remainder of food purchased yesterday and purchased 58 bundles of tobacco with salt and razor blades.

Wednesday, 28th October 1953.

SAWMILLI to KUSAI'IEGIBU.

Moved from SAWMILLI Village across the AMI River and up to KUSAI'IEGIBU Hamlet where the census was carried out in an orderly manner. However, when the time came to census MAKOREARI Hamlet only 8 people were found to be present. Police were despatched for the remainder who could be seen sitting around the hamlet, which is about a mile south east of KUSAI'IEGIBU. They soon arrived, led by an ex-labourer from Port Moresby who was resplendant in a white sun helmet with a red trade handkerchief as hat band, and long sleeved khaki shirt worn over a rami consisting of a mosquito net. After a pep talk the census was completed without further ado.

Eight more labourers were signed on and word was sent across to SAWMILLI warning the others to be prepared to accompany the patrol back to FORE tomorrow morning. They were also reminded to bring their week's food with them.

A good selection of food of excellent quality was bought and issued.

Thursday, 29th October 1953.

KUSAI'IEGIBU to FORE.

Broke camp and then fell in the newly engaged labourers only to find that they had neglected to bring any food. By 10.30 am. they had gathered sufficient for a week and the patrol departed, on the same track as that used on Monday, arriving back at FORE at 2.15 pm.

.....

Tuesday 23rd November to Thursday 31st December, 1953.

During this period all timber within the strip lateral clearances was felled and the majority of the timber obstructing the western approach was also removed. An area of 2½ acres was fenced and planted up with sweet potatoes.

Mr. P.O. Ford and Mr. M.A. Yelland from MENDI arrived here on the 25th November and departed again on the 28th November.

Mr. P.O. Brand returned from Lake KUTUBU on the 26th November with 640 lbs of rice and wheatmeal, which had been carried from KUTUBU.

Mr. A.D.O. Wren departed for Lake KUTUBU on the 1st December.

Acting on instructions from Headquarters Mr. P.O. Terrell arrived with police re-inforcements on the 24th December.

a
th

INTRODUCTION:

The rate of progress on the strip construction is slower than anticipated, due to the lack of food, both locally procurable and imported. Obviously the only way to surmount this difficulty, and get the strip into operation, is to arrange several airdrops of food. An initial drop of 6,000 lbs of rice would enable me to increase the labour force employed here to 100, which would mean a light aircraft strip could probably be completed within two months after the drop. Taking all factors into consideration, an airdrop of rice from Kikori should not prove any more expensive than the present highly unsatisfactory transportation overland from Kutubu. In the half-yearly estimates for January to June, 1954, 18,000 lbs of rice has been included, and this quantity will enable 100 labourers to be maintained for that period.

The visit by Mr. Wren, A.D.G., during October and November enabled me to carry out two short trips, one to the SUGU River area, north of the Erave, and the other to SAWMILLI village in the SAMEAKIGI Valley. Both trips were without incident, and all objects were achieved. Then, as stocks of food were exhausted and we were unable to contact Kutubu by radio, the Kutubu receiver being U/S, I made a trip to collect necessary rice and wheatmeal.

Messrs. L. Ford, P/O, and L. Yelland, M/A, who were patrolling the area north of the Erave, paid a short visit at the beginning of October. Their visit was very welcome as it enabled us to make use of their experience in the field of airstrip construction, and Mr. Yelland was able to advise us on medical matters.

In accordance with instructions from Mr. Foldi, A.D.D S.3 Mr. Terrell, P/O, with police reinforcements moved down here arriving on the 24th December. Nothing further has been heard from the TSIMBERIGI since the report (File No. 7/31-1/53) was forwarded.

AIRSTRIP CONSTRUCTION

At the beginning of October the axis of the strip was swung slightly, to a bearing of $277^{\circ} 30'$ to give a better approach from both ends. This realignment of the strip, being a matter of only 9 degrees, did not involve much extra work and the soft topsoil has now been removed for a distance of 650 yards from the eastern end.

Timber obstructing the side clearances was then felled and these are now complete. Work was then concentrated on the clearing of the heavy timber on the western approach. Most of this timber has now been cleared and an excellent view can be obtained along the line of approach down the ERAVE Valley.

Work is now proceeding on the strip surface and all available labour is employed carting earth to fill in a shallow depression 650 yards from the eastern end. Once this is completed the remaining 250 yards of topsoil will be removed and we will be able to begin levelling operations.

NATIVE SITUATION

After Mr. Wren's arrival here it was decided that a short patrol should be made to the area to the immediate north of the ERAVE River. The objects of this patrol were,

(1). To visit the KOURU, Upper SUGU River and PADRI areas and establish friendly relations so that, at a later date, we may be able to recruit labour from them; and

(2). To familiarise myself with the area and inhabitants.

As will be seen the route of the patrol was north west across the ERAVE to the IEGIRA Valley, then north across the SUGU River, returning to the IEGIRA Valley, then east to the TIBURU Valley, returning to FORE. All the people contacted were friendly and co-operative, although those of the Upper SUGU River and TIBURU Valley were extremely shy and women were only seen at a distance. In comparison those of the IEGIRA Valley, although they had only had the same amount of contact with recent patrols as the former, were not in the least afraid. The women weren't in the least afraid and came into camp to sell their own food.

The day that we arrived at TIRIBI Hamlet in the IEGIRA Valley most of the men of the Upper SUGU and IEGIRA Valleys were involved in fighting at MURIDAGAMA Hamlet on the northern bank of the SUGU. While we were in the area the fighting ceased and token payments were exchanged. I did not forbid fighting as we are not in a position to enforce the prohibition at this stage, but I did, however, tell them of the Government's views on the matter. The area remained quiet for some time but I have since learnt that hostilities have broken out again, following the death of a man from the southern side of the SUGU who was arrowed in the initial fighting. The southern SUGUs again crossed the river and claim that they decisively defeated the northerners, burning their hamlets and forcing them to flee up to MUGIBI, at the head of a small valley running at right angles to the SUGU. Their claims may of course be exaggerated. Eight men, four from each side, are said to have been killed. Two station labourers from KOURU Hamlet in the IEGIRA Valley are recuperating from arrow wounds. They were sent home for a spell early in December and are now undecided as to whether to return here or not.

The TIBURU Valley people who have enemies on all sides are of necessity extremely suspicious and panicked when the patrol arrived. However they later settled down and were quite friendly. An attempt was made to get the headmen of the area to accompany the patrol back to FORE to patch up old quarrels with the FOREs. However, they thought this may have been a trap as they have had experience with FORE treachery in the past and are not prepared to take any further risks. They offered to give the matter if FORE headmen accompanied the next patrol to the area.

As was reported earlier, fighting has broken out in the TSIMBERIGI Valley. Since the report covering the fighting was forwarded no further news has come to hand. Several TEMOGAPARA men including IOGEA, who escaped from custody during KIKORI Patrol No. 1 of 50/51, all of whom fled here when TEMOGAPARA was surrounded, are staying with relatives in this valley and claim that they will stay here. It is their opinion that the remaining TEMOGAPARAs have probably made their way to the KERABI Valley where they have friends.

A SAWMILLI man, PAKARI-IAWI, was sentenced to 4 months I.H.L. on being found guilty of committing adultery with his sister-in-law, whose husband is absent working in Port Moresby. The sentence is being served at KUTUBU as a gaol has not yet been erected here.

NATIVE LABOUR

The labour force has been steadily increased throughout the period to 59, consisting of 24 local men, 18 SAWMILLIS, 10 from the IEGIRA Valley, and 7 Kutubuans. The local labourers are providing themselves with food and of the remainder, the only ones which I have been able to feed consistently for the entire three months have been the Kutubuans. The SAWMILLIS went home each weekend for two months to collect food, and the men from the IEGIRA Valley enjoyed a spell in their villages throughout December owing to food stocks being exhausted here. Three hundred man days were lost during December due to illness - mainly 'flu - which practically all the labour contracted at some time during the month; a further 3 weeks was expended in collecting stores from SUMBURU.

From this it can be seen that the food shortage caused much time being spent on activities other than those directly concerned with airstrip construction.

HEALTH

Many cases of severe colds, which on occasion have developed into pneumonia have been experienced by patrol personnel, and several more from local villages have been treated at the Aid Post here. The same illness has been reported in various degrees of intensity in the SAMBERIGI and other adjacent areas, though the indications are that it is now on the wane. Two deaths have been reported to date. I have avoided using the term "influenza" in describing this outbreak, as it does not appear to be so virulent as the sickness recently experienced elsewhere in the Territory.

HOMBI-PELELO, a local native, was gored by a bush pig recently and was subsequently evacuated to KIKORI for treatment. To date he has not returned.

WIRELESS COMMUNICATIONS

The ATRA Transceiver broke down during October when a fault developed and several transmitter valves were blown. The set was forwarded to the Supervising Technician (Radio) and a replacement set was received here on the 5th December. This Transceiver is working satisfactorily but due to bad weather conditions and the flat state of the old batteries contact with KUTUBU has been rather patchy. New batteries have recently been received.

STORES AND SUPPLIES

Except for some trade items which were not supplied on previous requisitions, and which have been re-indented for, all items from current half yearly requisitions have come to hand. Rice sufficient for approximately one month is held in the store and present trade stocks are adequate.

I am now able to buy a little fresh food from local villages. However, this source cannot be depended on as yet. Issues of rice are being augmented with a small quantity of food from station gardens.

Estimates for the next half year have been forwarded for approval.

ati

ATIONS

Qu

M

POLICE

The present strength of the detachment is ten, consisting of 1 Corporal; 1 L/Cpl. and 8 Constables. In addition, 1 Sergeant, 1 Constable and the Const/Bug. are on leave.

As from the 1st November Cpl. IGAROBAL was promoted to the rank of Sergeant. L/Cpl. PETOTO and Const. AVAIMERE were promoted Cpl. and L/Cpl. respectively early in December.

The standard of morale and work of the detachment remains high.

CENSUS

The census of SAWMILLI Village in the SAMBERIGI Valley was carried out on the 27th and 28th of October, 205 people being seen. This count, the third attempted, was treated a lot more seriously than previous efforts and the villagers have settled down really well since work here commenced.

As in the FORE Valley, the birth place of all adults was noted. Unlike the FORE people, who came from near and far, nearly all the SAWMILLIIs were born in the TUGI Valley area. Those who have migrated in, have all, with the exception of one man from the TIBUKU Valley north of the ERAVE, come from villages in the immediate vicinity.

As compared with the remainder of the Sub-District, the average size of family is large. To some extent this may be attributed to the fact that the area has been the scene of much fighting in the past and also because adults seem to be more susceptible to the epidemics that strike periodically. The children orphaned by these conditions are then adopted by near relatives.

MAP

The original of the patrol map was returned by your Headquarters and a quantity of mapping paper has been received. Additional information has been added and the map goes forward with this report. Could the original be returned again, please, after the printing of copies.

VILLAGE OFFICIALS

V.C. SEMERIGI of SAU paid his first visit here during October and had no trouble to report in his area. V.Cs. MEREBE of SUMAMI and NATABE of BESABURU arrived on the 14th December to report on the fighting in the TSIMBERIGI Valley. BOBORE of MASIKI and EBABIAPU of MAROROGO are the only Village Constables who have not paid a visit here since the patrol arrived.

.....W. J. Brand.....
W. J. Brand
O. I. C. ERAVE Patrol Post.

SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS

LAKE KUTUBU

No. 10 of 52/54

By: W.J.Brand P.O.

To: MUBI, KOKOMO, SAMBERIGI, and FORE
Valleys.



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

PATROL REPORT

District of SOUTHERN HIGHLANDS LAKE KUTUBU
Report No. 10 of 53/54

Patrol Conducted by W.J. BRAND, Patrol Officer.

Area Patrolled MUBI, KOKOMO, SAMBERIGI and FORE Valleys.

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans J. B. Battersby, Cadet Patrol Officer.

Natives Police 10, Carriers 20 N.M.O. 1

Duration—From 1/19 54 to 31 3/19 54

Number of Days Ninety (90) days (incomplete)

Did Medical Assistant Accompany? No.

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services 24 2/19 53

Medical Nil /19.....

Map Reference.....

Objects of Patrol (1) Installation of Patrol Post & Construction of Airstrip at FORE.

(2) Extension and consolidation of Administration.
Influence.

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

/ /19

District Commissioner

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund £.....

See also Native Affairs

pub

MIC
In
M E

30-11-53

24th May 1954

The District Commissioner,
H.M.S.

Patrol Report No. 22/53-54. H.M.S. Patrol Post.

The above Report submitted by Mr. W.J. Brand, Patrol Officer in charge H.M.S. Patrol Post, in regard to activities at that Post for the quarter ending 31st March 1954, is acknowledged with thanks.

It is apparent that good progress has been made with the construction of the airstrip, for use initially by light aircraft, during this period, and the efforts of Mr. Brand with the assistance of Mr. Battersby, are most commendable. It is the important prerequisite to establishing the Post on a sound and lasting basis as a base for patrols into the surrounding areas. It therefore must, despite difficulties, be persevered with to a successful conclusion some time we hope, in July.

Arrangements are in hand for the Navy Govt of bagged rice and before you receive this, you should have been notified of the exact date the Catalina aircraft is available for the task. This aircraft with heavy demands on its time and occasional unavailability is not by any means easy to charter.

Regarding Cadet Patrol Officer Battersby being left on his own at H.M.S. it is one of the little difficulties to be surmounted. It is obviously not sound policy for the Administration to allow a Cadet Patrol Officer to be left on his own in any part of the Restricted Area. Therefore I am not able to agree to the request that Mr. Brand leave Mr. Battersby on the station by himself, even though the area is quiet at the present time. The Sergeant should be able to carry on during the days they are away.

*note
Dunoon
24/5/54*

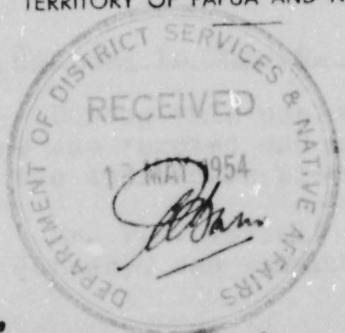
PA

A.A. Roberts
(A.A. Roberts),
Director, H.M.S.

20/16/54



TERRITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA



In Reply Please Quote
No. 63/ 30-1/54

Sub - District Office,
TAGE.
LAKE KUTUBU S.H.D.
12th May, 1954

The Director,
Department of District Services & Native Affairs.
PORT MORESBY.

PATROL REPORT No. 10 of 52/53.

Please find attached three copies of the above report covering activities at the Erave Patrol Post from the 1st January to the 31st March, 1954.

2. The position has much improved at this establishment over the quarter under review. Now that the strip under construction has been designed by Messrs. Ferns and Gill of the Department of Civil Aviation, and food is being dropped to feed labour, 50 yards per week is being completed. At the 7th May, 350 yards of surface had been completed. If the present rate of progress can be maintained the requisite 850 yards of surface will be completed by the 16th July. However before a plane can land side clearances will have to be provided where cuttings are above 4 feet. This work will not be wasted as it forms part of the construction of a D.C. 3 strip. This should be finished by the end of July. At this stage D.C.A. will allow an inspection aircraft to land and it is hoped then, they will allow aircraft to operate commercially from then on, while the remaining 4 feet is being cut back to their normal standards.

3. This present rate of progress can be maintained provided food is available in the first instance and a memorandum re further airdrops has been addressed to you accordingly (Kutubu 48-28-2-A/54 of 10th April, 1954 refers.)

Other factors are (1) number of labour available (11) their health, and (11) rain. With regard to (1) may permission be given for Mr. Battersby to be left on the station to supervise work while Mr. Brand visits villages in the Erave, Simbirigi, Sau triangle to recruit labour. As your instructions now stand Mr. Battersby is not to remain by himself. It would be preferable to have full time supervision of work by a European of the Airfield labour and I am satisfied as a result of my latest inspection that the native situation is very quiet now. Pending your advice both officers will make short visits to individual villages in this area, when necessary, to maintain station labour at the required level.

(E.D. Wren)
a/Assistant District Officer

Copy D.C. S.H.D.

PATROL DIARY

Friday, 1st January to Sunday, 31st January, 1954.

During this period all remaining top soil on the strip surface was removed and work on the removal of all timber obstructing the approaches proceeded.

Mr. P.O. Terrell departed for the SAMBERIGI Valley on the 17th January, and returned here on the 31st January.

Monday, 1st February to Sunday, 20th March, 1954.

Most of this time was spent working on the Western end of the strip - levelling off the higher areas and using the earth obtained as filling for the depressions.

Mr. P.O. Terrell departed for KUTUBU on the 8th Feb..

Monday, 21st March to Wednesday, 31st March, 1954.

A start was made on levelling the strip to D.C.A. requirements and a section, 150'x 200' was completed.

INTRODUCTION:

During the period under review progress made with airstrip construction has been most pleasing. The remaining 250 yards of soft topsoil was removed during January and the majority of the heavy timber obstructing the Eastern approach was felled. During the remainder of the period work was confined to the levelling of the strip surface.

With the first airdrop of rice on the on the 27th January the ever present food problem was overcome and although only 2146 pounds of rice were recovered we were able to increase the labour force and concentrate all efforts on airstrip construction. A further airdrop of rice, which was highly successful with a 98% recovery, was carried out on the 8th March. A further drop of rice during April has been requested.

The allocation of £2112 on requisition B435/53-54 will provide for the feeding of the present labour force with airdropped rice until the end of the present financial year at least.

VISITORS:

The District Commissioner, Mr. G.W. Toogood, accompanied by Patrol Officer J.A. Frew and Mr. G. Young of the Methodist Overseas Mission at MENDI paid a short visit during the course of the District Commissioner's inspectional tour of the District. The party arrived from KUTUBU on the 11th January and departed for IALIBU on the 13th January.

Mr. C.E.T. Terrell, P/O, who had been re-inforcing the detachment here since late December, returned to KUTUBU on the 8th February.

The A.P.C. KUTUBU-MENDI-ERAVE Geological Survey under Mr. F. Rickwood, with Messrs. Patrol Officers Ford and Counsel acting as escorts arrived on the 9th February. Stores for the survey were airdropped on the 14th February and the party departed for KIKORI via the TSIMBERIGI and KERABI Valleys on the 15th. Mr. P.O. Ford returned here after accompanying the survey to the Eastern end of the KERABI Valley.

The Chief Inspector of Airports, Mr. R.D. Firms, and Mr. R.D. Gill, Airport Inspector carried out a detailed survey of the aerodrome site from the 11th to 21st February. Mr. J.B. Battersby, C.P.O. accompanied the party and remained here on its departure.

The A.P.C. KUTUBU-ERAVE-KIKORI Geological Survey led by Mr. I. Gillespie and Mr. W. Armour also arrived on the 11th February. The Catalina carried out four highly successful airdrops on the 15th March and after spending a few days sorting and relaying supplies the party departed for the reported seepages N.E. of Mt. Murray on the 21st March with Mr. A.L. Ford acting as escort.

Although none of these patrols were primarily concerned with native administration it is evident that they have quite a good effect on the local indigenes who have never before seen so many Europeans.

AIRSTRIP CONSTRUCTION:

The remainder of the soft topsoil has now been removed from an area 130' wide by 2550' long and prior to the arrival of the two D.C.A. officials a start was made on the levelling of the western end.

Messrs. Firms and Gill carried out a detailed survey of the strip site and environs and pegged out the strip for light aircraft, which is 200' wide and 2550' long. Their inspection revealed that all factors necessary for the construction of a landing strip for use by D.C.3 aircraft are present. Their design for the light aircraft landing strip, which is on the same alignment on which we were working previously, is such that it will allow the development of the D.C.3 strip at a later date without interference with the already completed smaller strip. The surface slopes are also sufficient to provide adequate drainage without having to provide sub-surface drains. This design entails a greater amount of work than that originally envisaged but when work on the construction is completed we will have the consolation of knowing that the landing field will be conforming to the rigorous standards which D.C.A. set.

After the departure of the two D.C.A. officials the 1200' to 1350' by 200' wide section was completed in a week. A start was then made on the 1350' to 1500' section. This 300' length of strip has now been completed and grassed with a local native grass.

If this present rate of progress can be maintained I anticipate that the light plane strip surface will be ready for operations at the beginning of July. A further fortnight to three weeks will be required to completely clear the approaches and removing all earth above a height of four feet on the vertical face remaining on the northern side of the strip after cutting to level. The strip will then be ready for use by the D.C.A. inspectional plane.

NATIVE SITUATION:

No fresh outbreaks of violence have been reported from this area during the last three months, although the IANGURI people, who live on the Northern slopes of Mt. SUMANI (MURRAY) may have been involved in a series of murders in the area South of Mt. SUMANI on the KIKORI side of the District boundary. KIKORI has taken some action in this matter but nothing will be done from this end until the airstrip is completed.

During his stay here Mr. C.E.T. Terrell paid a visit to the villages of SAWMILLI, MASIKI and SAU in the SAMBERIGI Valley with the aim of completing the census and instituting a plan to have all able males of the area work here on a week on week off basis. While Mr. Terrell was in the area and able to supervise them the scheme worked quite well but it fell flat following his return to KUTUBU and nothing more was done until permission was granted by Headquarters for myself to leave the Post for the purposes of recruiting while Mr. P.O. Ford was here awaiting the arrival of the KUTUBU-ERAVE-KIKORI A.P.C. Geological survey. After spending five days in the SAMBERIGI I returned here with 30 labourers, who returned to their villages after working a week. Since then no one has come in of their own accord and for such time as the restriction on my movements remains we will not be able to make use of this labour source. This is regrettable as these men would feed themselves and need no issues of equipment. Payment of one Gold-Lip M.O.P. shell is considered to be adequate payment for two months work.

A local man, LEWA-EIBA of IAMBERIGI Village, which is situated at the western end of the light aircraft strip, was sentenced to three months I.H.L. after being found guilty of behaving in a threatening manner towards Interpreter SOG. The sentence is being served at KUTUBU.

NATIVE LABOUR:

During this period the labour force has been almost doubled and at present 104 labourers are being employed. Of this number, 25 have been supplied from KUTUBU and in addition to this number 21 MENDI carriers who were not required by Mr. P.O. Ford when he accompanied the A.P.C. Geological Survey to KIKORI, are being gainfully employed here until his return.

During February 25 men from the LANGURI area came in seeking employment but after spending a fortnight here they decided that they had had enough and 17 of them left without notice. Probably the main reason for this was the fact that I was obliged to send their leader, a Motu speaker formerly employed as a domestic by Mr. E. Flower, A.D.O., as guide to the A.P.C. survey. It appears that they thought that they were at the mercy of the SAMBERIGIS, a number of whom are working here.

Thirty-seven men from the local hamlets have just finished working for two months and a further 20 are being employed for the same period. Every able bodied male in this valley has now worked on the strip at some time or other.

HEALTH:

The general health of station personnel has been quite good. The usual run of minor illnesses pneumonia and malaria was experienced and the 'flu epidemic petered out early in January. Several deaths from pneumonia were reported from the SAMBERIGI Valley and two men from this area also died from this illness.

Twenty of the station labourers contracted mumps during March. The Dept. of Public Health was advised of the outbreak and we were told that there was no need for a quarantine. All cases were isolated and the infection was prevented from spreading to the local population.

WIRELESS COMMUNICATIONS:

The ATR4 Transceiver again broke down at the beginning of January and was forwarded to Port Moresby for repair. A replacement set was received on 25th January and is still operating satisfactorily.

STORES AND SUPPLIES:

All stores from current six-monthly requisitions have been requisitioned for but to date very few items have been received.

Only 3,151 lbs. of sweet potatoes have been purchased locally during the last three months. Station gardens have produced a further 6,000 lb. Actually the gardens produced more than this figure but the remainder was devoured by rats, in which the area abounds. I think that the only way to remove this menace would be to lay baits. Trapping has been tried but the pests soon become trap shy.

A further 24 square mouth spades were requisitioned for recently by Mr. Terrell while he was in Moresby and it was requested that these tools be supplied by airdrop. Twelve round mouth shovels, which were part of the same order, were received by airdrop on the 8th March. Requisition No. 515 of the 26th February, on which the 24 spades are marked N/S has since come to hand. At present 12 spades are all that we have available for strip construction and efforts are being made to obtain another 24, either by airdrop or via Kutubu.

CENSUS:

During his visit to the SAMBERIGI Valley in January Mr. C.E.T. Terrell P/O, carried out a census check of SAU and MASIKI villages. Completed Village Population Register sheets are appended.

This check revealed a population of 188 at MASIKI and 382 at SAU, an increase of 69 and 135 respectively over the figures obtained at the initial census during September, 1952. As Mr. Terrell did not receive the full co-operation of these exasperating people I think that a further increase may be expected at the next check.

The only other point worthy of note is the large number of young men who are employed outside the district, mainly at KIKORI and Port Moresby. The majority of the 49 men absent working have gone out to work since the initial census in 1952, and some of the men then absent have still not returned.

POLICE:

The present strength of the detachment is 7, consisting of a Sergeant and 6 Constables. L/Opl. AVAIMERE and Constables PURARA, GAVIA and INGITA are currently employed as Escort to the KUTUBU-ERAWE-KIKORI Geological survey. Cpl. PETOTO and Sgt. KUNABO are on leave.

The detachment continues to work well.

MAP:

As no additional information has been added to the patrol map during this period it is being retained here.

.....*W.J. Brand*.....
W.J. Brand
O.I.C. ERAWE Patrol Post.

